

The Arranged: Forever yours

- 
- 

### \*\*\*\*\*INTRODUCTION\*\*\*\*\*

I felt a hot clap on my cheek and I was down on the floor. I screamed my lungs out but I knew that I was just wasting my time because no one can hear or help me.

Me: please, I'm sorry.

He kicked me once more and spat on me then walked out with his wife throwing an evil laugh at me.

I sat on the floor crying, nursing my sore wounds.

It times like these where I wish my parents were still alive.

Me: Dad why do I have to suffer like this, you

said you will always protect me.

I stood up and went to a bathroom., I ran the bathtub with water and just sat inside it.

My Life, huh.

I grew up in KZN, Durban to be specific, I lived with my father who was a Mayor. My mother died while giving birth to me.

Life was good, I had everything I wished for but though my father was a Mayor, I was not that popular. When my father died I had to move in with my auntie who married me off to Maxwell Khanyile as his second wife when I was 18 years old and on my matric because his senior wife had a problem giving him babies and I was young and healthy and my auntie was taken by the fact that Max had money.

At first he treated me well, gave me everything I needed and even took me to a medical school, problem started when I had my second miscarriage, he started physically and

emotionally abusing me along with his wife, they made it their priority to make me feel bad at all times, I desperately wanted a baby so I could have him off my back, but hey...here I am, on a third miscarriage.

Life has showed me flames, everything was upside down, My job is the only thing that makes sense.

I am Venus Palesa Johnson, I am 27 years old and this is not a story but my life....

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*1\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

After dressing up I put some make-up on my bruises, I don't want the whole world knowing that I am from an abusive house hold.

I make my way to the kitchen to make myself breakfast, eat and go to work.

Max: why are you dressed up?.

Me: I'm going to work.

Max: mhh.

I make and eat my breakfast in silence, I have nothing to say to this selfish beast.

Zodwa works in.

This woman is pure evil in every way and she's a gold-digger too.

She married Max when she was 37 years old and apparently she reached early menopause and so she couldn't bare Max children and that's where I came in.

I can't help but to feel that something is wrong somewhere in her head.

Her: Khanyile.

Him: MaZulu, how did you sleep?.

Her: like a baby my love.

I chuckled.

Me: more like a dragon.

I said that to myself.

Her: oh hi Mbali.

I hate it when she translate my name to IsiZulu, no offense, I have nothing against the language but my mother named me Palesi and that is how it should remain, I mean the name is the only thing that makes me feel close to my mother and her Sesotho culture.

Me: good morning.

Annoyed.

Her: tjo, all the bruises, gone?....ai you are really a professional shame, you should quite working at that directionless clinic, change professions and be a make up artist instead.

I didn't response, I just ate my food, trying by all

means not to lash out.

Her: anyways where are you going, looking so dressed up?.

Max: She's going to work.

Her: wearing that?.

Me: what is that suppose to mean?.

Her: You can't wear that, you are someone's wife. You better start dressing like it.

All this woman want is to see me sad all the time, There is absolutely nothing wrong with what I was wearing.

I was wearing a tight skirt that reached below my knees, a white vest with a long coat and high hills.

Her: you can't be showing off your boobs, you've just lost a baby. you have to look decent.

Wow!...did she have to take it there?.

I suddenly became emotional, not because of

what she said, I just thought about everything in my life.

I'm young, I'm a doctor a really successful one at that, I have everything I want except the real thing I want, Love and Happiness.

Max: Zodwa, leave her alone.

Max could see that I was getting emotional.

Her: tjo...ai I was just trying to teach her as a senior wife.

Max: Zodwa.

Her: What?..my love it's clear that Mbali is still in pain that's why I think she should take a leave from work, it's not like it's busy at her work.

Me: I'm a doctor, what do you mean it's not busy?.

I was shouting.

Her: don't talk to me like that.

Zodwa has always been jealous of my

profession, after all she's nothing but a former owner of a township hair and nail salon, she's doing nothing about her life other than blowing Max's money.

My conditions to the marriage was that I wanted to study further, I was in my matric at that time, and that is how Max ended up paying for my tuition fees.

I was really focused at University, I didn't have friends and definitely had no boyfriend because I knew what was at stake.

Max: apologize Venus.

Me: what?.

I felt a hot slap.

Max: you are getting too big for your shoes.

I placed my hand where he hit me.

Him: and Zodwa is right, you are not going to work.



Call in sick or something.

Her: mhh mhh.

I had no words, I just rushed out to my room and cried.

+++++

I must have felt asleep because I wake when I hear my phone ringing.

Me: damn it, missed call.

I woke up and it was around two in the afternoon.

I go and wash my face.

My eyes were swollen and I looked like a ghost with the make-up all over my face since I didn't wash it off the time I took a nap.

After i that change into something more comfortable.

I listen to some music in my phone and curiosity leads me to calling the number from

the missed call.

I dial and place the phone on my ear.

Voice: Hello.

Me: Hi, I received a call from this number not so long ago, but unfortunately I couldn't take the call.

Voice: You are?

Me: Dr Venus, Venus Khanyile.

Voice: oh, it must have been Dr Shezi calling you, please wait while I transfer you to her unit.

Me: Okey Thank you.

I waited for a while.

Dr Shezi: Dr, hi...thank you very much for getting back to me.

Me: don't sweat it, how can I help you.

Her: straight to the point, girl I love you already.

I laughed.

Her:I'm calling about a job offer, Netcare hospital here in Pretoria, We have a situation. are you familiar with Viral Meningitis?.

Me: Yes I am very much aware of it.

Her: it's currently showing great threat here in Pretoria with children being the most victims, now with you being a Pediatrician, We really need your help.

Me: Pretoria, ei it's too far.

I have a family here in Durban.

Her: Please at least think about it, and we don't have much time so please be fast.

Me:I'm not promising anything.

I heard someone talking from the background.

Her: Excuse me.

She attended that person.

Her: sorry about that, Dr I really have to go now so please promise me you'll give it a thought.

Me: okey, will do.

She hung up.

A job in one of the well recognised hospital in a new city, could be exactly what I need but then again Max will never allow it.

Ohh what do I do now.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*2\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I make my way down stairs.

It's so quiet in this house, not that I'm complaining.

I have no energy to deal with the evil couple.

I make myself a Greek salad and eat it in the

dining room while watching news on the TV.

I sat there for approximately thirty minutes and I haven't heard even one sound or someone's voice, indicating that there is someone in here.

I decide to cook dinner.

Nothing fancy just a healthy meal for Max and Zodwa, not that they deserve it, I'm just bored.

Zodwa walks in the room being pulling a small suitcase and Max was following her.

She put the bag near the couch on the dining room and come back, stand next to her husband.

I focus on what I was doing.

Max: Are we invisible to you now Venus.

I gave him a stare.

Me: are you going somewhere?.

Him: No, MaZulu is visiting her mother.

Me: is she okay?.

Her: Why?...do you expect her not to be okey?.

Me: you are going late at night, that's why I'm asking.

Her: That's none of your business, I have a car, I can drive so I can go anywhere, anytime.

She clicked her tongue.

I could tell that things were bad between the two of them, maybe they had a fight.

Me: okey, dinner will be ready in ten minutes.

Her: good.

Max went and sat on the chair near the dinner table.

I arranged the table and started dishing up.

Max: thank you.

Zodwa gave me a stare.

Her: you are not eating with us?.

Me: I had a late lunch.

Max: you can't cook and not eat the food you prepared. we can't be sure that you didn't put something in here.

Her: plus you barely cook, what is the occasion? poisoning us?.

I looked at them in disbelief.

Like seriously?

If I wanted to kill the both of them I would have done that a long time ago.

I sat down and dish for myself.

They looked at me as I ate.

Me: Max, I received a call from a Hospital in Pretoria. they are offering me a job.

Him: I hope you said no.

Me: you havent even heard why they really need me.

Him: the answer is still No Venus.

Me: The children there are dying due to viral

meningitis, I have to help.

I said that in an annoyed manner .

Him: The only baby you should be worried about, is the baby you are suppose to carry, my baby. Now don't go around caring for everyone else baby.

You are not going, that's final.

I threw the spoon on the plate and went to my room.

I swear I hate that man.

I took my father's picture and started looking at it.

I flash back to all the good times we had to together, I end up smiling with tears on my cheek.

Someone knocked.

I wiped my tears and put the photo inside my drawer.



Me: Come in.

Max walks in wearing his pyjamas and a silk silver gown on top.

Him: Venus.

He sits on my bed.

Me: what do you want?.

Him: Zodwa said I should tell you that she's gone.

Why would Zodwa want to tell me that?. mcm  
Max is lying, he was using that as an excuse to come to my room nje.

Me: okey.

Him: I think we should try for a baby again.

I looked at him, that was unexpected.

He came closer and I used my hands to block him.

Me: Max wait, not tonight.

He got angry.

Him: why not?

Me: I am not in the mood.

His faced turned red.

Him: all you have to do is open your legs, don't tell me about moods.

Me: Max, I...I..

I stood up and stood close to the door and he followed me.

Me: I need time to heal, let's give it a few months then I promise we'll try.

He banged the door with both his hands, with my head in between those hands.

Him: I am not getting any younger.

He tried kissing me but I pushed me.

He felt on the bed, I tried opening the door but it was locked.

Him: You think you are clever?.

He came and started beating me up, he went as far as kicking me while I was on the floor.

I placed my hand in my womb, I felt sharp pain where he kicked.

Him: Not in the mood my left foot.

He tore my pyjama and panties and he forced himself on me.

I couldn't scream anymore, it was useless anyway, no one would help me.

I kept on praying that he finish up so he can get off me.

In no time he was done and he took my torn pyjama and wiped himself, threw it on the floor and left my room.

I was is excruciating pain.

I could barely walk and so I ended up lying on the floor because I couldn't get to my bed.

I walk up in the morning and the pain was still there but it was better then last night.

I prepared myself a bath and I packed some few clothes.

I bath then dress up, not forgeting my make-up.

I made sure I dressed to impress.

Not too much through, I don't want attention just trying to be classy.

I heard down stairs pulling my suitcase.

I found Max reading a news paper, he looked surprised seeing me like that.

Him: where the hell do you think you're going?.

Me: Pretoria.

Him: you don't listen now do you?.

Me: No you don't listen.

I must say he didn't expect me to talk to him like that and I also did not expect that but I'm tired of being controled and abused by an old

man just because he paid Lobola for me.

Me: But today you are going to start listening to me.

I am going to Pretoria and I am going today, In fact in the next coming minutes. Now this is what you will do, you will not call me, not send your pathetic people to keep tabs on me and lastly you will make sure you book a room for me in one of the hotels and pay for it.

Unless you want to be front page news tomorrow, Women abuse is a very serious offense especially for a highly respected business man like you.

He was lost for words.

Him: you wouldn't dare.

Me: watch me.

I walked towards the door.

Me: make sure you book that room, I wouldn't want to be homeless in a new city, I might end

up telling wrong people about how much of a bursted you are.

I walked out leaving him astonished.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*3\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I must say, I took a huge risk blackmailing Max like that.

He likes to always feel in charge and powerful and what I did back there , I took all the power from him. It's about time I take control of my life, I just hope it doesn't backfire.

I first make a stop at a phamarcy, I need some morning after pills. Last thing I want is falling pregnant, at least not now.

I hear my phone beep.

I took it out and it's a message from Max.

-----Hotel details-----

I smile to myself, Not so mighty after all.

By the time I got to the hotel It was already dark  
and I was tired from all the driving.

I run my self a warm bath and just look at all the  
bruises and scars on my body.

At least they were in hidden areas, like my  
thighs, I never revealed my thighs in public.

My phone rings and I wake out of the bathtub  
soaking wet, I wrap a towel around my body and  
go and answer my phone.

Me: Max, what do you want...I told you not to  
call me.

Him: wait, don't drop the call.

I wanted to check if you travelled and arrived  
well.

Me: well I'm fine now bye.

Him: Venus, wait.

Me: What do you want Max?.

Him: Venus I...I'm sorry.

Wait...say what?...he is sorry?.

Him: I know I promised your aunt to always treat you right and I know I haven't been keeping up to my promise.

Me: Max I really don't have time for your pity party, of you don't have something to say and by that I mean something worth saying, I'd really like to get back to what I was doing.

Him: Venus.

Me: Bye Max.

I dropped the call.

I've been to hell and back because of that man, I don't buy the whole "I'm sorry" act of him mcm.

I finish what I was doing and went to bed,



tomorrow is a big day ahead.

-----

I wake up in the early morning and I realised I wasn't home.

I let out a sigh.

I woke up and cleaned my self and went downstairs for a breakfast.

I ordered a grilled chicken, buns and a coke. It's not exactly a healthy meal but I've been living healthy, I need to spoil my taste buds a little.

Around nine I drove to the hospital, I needed to talk to Mrs Shezi about the job offer.

It was packed when I got there and very busy, I went to the receptionist.

Me: excuse me, I need to see Dr Shezi.

This girl was all over the place giving me less attention.

Her: do you have an appointment?/

Me: No but...

I couldn't even finish my sentence.

Her: Sorry Miss, you'll have to make an appointment Dr Shezi is really busy.

Miss? this girl is really annoying me.

Me: I know but please call her and tell her that...

Her: Like I said, Make an appointment.

This was it, she is really not going to call her mxm.

I sat for like two hours on those cold chairs. I was beyond irritated.

Voice: what is a beautiful creature like you doing in here because I can tell you are not sick, oh maybe even sickness can't defeat your beauty.

I looked around and there he was, Looking handsome with his light skin, the beautiful pink lips I watched as made the sounds of which I

didn't exactly got, he was beauty in every angle.

I quickle snapped out of it.

Me: excuse me?.

Him: are you here to see a doctor or something?.

He was wearing those docters white coat.

Me: yes kind of.

Him: maybe I can help.

Me: well I'm actually looking for docter Shezi.

He looked at me.

Him: are you expecting?

Me: What?.

Him: I mean no offense but we have two Dr Shezi's in this hospital and they are both obstetricians.

Me: ohh No No I'm not pregnant. She offered me a job actually.

Him: oh good, I was almost disappointed I mean you can't be caring other fools baby but mine.

He said that with a smile and I laughed this guy is really crazy and to think that he is a doctor ai.

Him: wait let me check if she's free.

He went to the receptionist and it looked like they got along very well.

He came after some time.

Him: she's unavailable for now but she'll be out in no time, now if you don't mind we can wait in my office.

Me: why not.

I followed him as we walked to his office.

This guy is funny I give you that you know I've laughing and smiling since I met him.

Wait? I was smiling....for a first time in a long time I was smiling.

Him: tell me more about you.

Me: like what?. (smiles).

Him: how you grew up, your love life anything.

Love life neh? what do I say now.

Luckily a lady came in and saved me.

Her:I heard you were.....

She walked in.

Her: sorry I didn't know you had company.

Him: No , actually she's here to see you.

Me: you must be Dr Shezi.

Oh this woman looked good in her pregnant self.

She gave me her hand for a handshake.

Her: you are?

Me: Dr Khanyile please call me Venus.

Her: ohh Venus, I must say you look younger than I expected.

I flashed a smile.

Him: you're the new docter.

Me: I believe so.

Dr Shezi: and she's very married.

Him: you didn't tell me that.

Me: you didnt ask.

Dr Shezi laughed.

Her: come with me.

We walked out, she explained everything that was expected of me and trust me within an hour I was working. time past by.

Her: Dr Khanyile.

Me: please call me Venus.

Her: in that case you call me Amanda.

I smiled.

Me: I can do that.

Her: you know you don't have to over work

yourself.

Me: trust me when I tell you that I'm used to it.

Her: even so, go home now. We don't want hubby worrying.

Speaking about hubby, is he here with you?.

Me: No, he's back at KZN.

Her: oh.

Me: yes.

Her: Venus I don't mean to pry but you are married to Mr Khanyile and he seems old for you, more like your father...bo offense.

Me: Don't worry none taken, actually it was an arranged marriage kind of thing but if you don't mind I don't want to talk about it.

Her: ohh OK I understand.

Him: See you tomorrow ladies.

Me: Bye.

Ama: He really likes you.

Me: Who?

Her: Mike.

Me: who's Mike.

Her: girl you spent hours with someone whom you don't even know his name?.

I laughed no wait actually I blushed.

Me: what? he's just a nice guy nothing more nothing less.

Her: owk if you say so.

Me: why arent you going home?.

Her: waiting for hubby to finish his rounds.

Me: what? you husband works here?.

She flashed a smile.

Her: speaking of a devil.

Him: oh so I'm a devil now.

He came and brushed her big belly and kissed



on her forehead.

Him: how are my favourite people in the world?

Her: we're good just missing you, oh baby meet Venus, Dr Khanyile the one that I told you about.

Him: Hi, I'm Dr Shezi her husband.

Me: nice meeting you.

Her: baby you know Venus was working as a volunteer back at KZN but she signed a three months contract with us.

Him: hau only three months.

I laughed.

Me: I have family back at KZN .

Him: okey.

Her: we should get going, Venus promise you'll go home and have some rest.

Me: I promise, drive safely.

Him: goodnight.

They left.

Now this is how I hoped my life would be, not perfect, I don't want perfect. All I want is a loving household with care, unity, respect and Love, lots of Love.

I looked at them as they exited, my idea of a loving home.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*4\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Whoever said time fly definitely knew what he was talking about.

It feels like yesterday but hey, three months gone.

I really enjoyed spending time with Amanda, she became the best friend I ever had. Mike on the

other hand, he still try to initiate a relationship between us even though I told him that it can never happen, I may not like or love Max but he is still my husband, I ought to respect him.

Amanda: I can't believe you're going already.

Me: I know, I don't want to go.

Her: then don't, move on this side, start a new life..divorce him.

Me: I tried divorcing that man, trust me it won't work, he'll pull the whole lawyer thing on me and I don't have the strength and money.

Her: No hunny listen, I have a brother and he's a lawyer..if we talk to him he..he can help you.

Me: Amanda please, I know you mean well but trust me it won't work.

Her: don't let him do this to you.

Me: Amanda.

Her: owk fine but if you change your mind.

I cut her sentence.

Me: yes I'll tell you.

We continued eating lunch.

Me: oh fuck i'm late.

Her:late for what?

Me: court, remember the case of the sexually abuse girl I treated?.

Her: ohh..you better get going then.

Me: yes.

Her: and don't forget, your party.

Me: I won't.

I toke my stuff and went off to the magistrate court.

Oh by the way Amanda and the rest of the stuff are throwing me a farewell party tonight.

-----

My phone rang before I could enter the court

room.

Me: Hello.

Max: when are you coming back.

Me: when I'm ready.

Him: Venus you said three months.

Me: Max, I'll call you back I'm kind of busy.

Max: Venus don't push me.

I dropped the call.

I made my way inside the court room. I was called to the stand.

Him: Mrs Khanyile, I'm Mr Khumalo and I'm representing Mr Nzimande, I believe you treated miss Aphiwe Cele?.

Me: yes I did.

Him: tell how you met her.

Me: She came to the hospital after being sexually violeted, she couldn't walk properly due

to pain.

Him: your report here says you found drugs in her system is that so?.

Me: yes we did.

Him: so is it possible that Miss Aphiwe is an addict and she lied about Mr Nzimande raping her when she actually tried to blackmail Mr Nzimande?.

Me: Her vaginal skin was torn.

Him: answer the question, yes or No?.

Me: Yes.

I saw a smirk on Mr Nzimande's face and this lawyer was making my life a living hell.

I was sadden to hear that Mr Nzimande was proven innocent, I saw fear in Aphile's eyes.

Why do people always prey on the weak mcm.

After court, I saw the lawyer who represented Mr Nzimande, I went to him.

Me: How could you do that? she's 14.

Him: Don't hate the player hate the game.

Like seriously, I can't believe this.

Me: you have a nerve, I bet you knew he did it.

I was beyond the word angry.

Me: where are your morals?

He chuckled.

Him: Funny you are the one saying that,  
sleeping with someone old enough to be your  
father is not so moralful.

He clicked his tongue and left.

I was beyond the word embarrassed. How does  
he even know that?. Oh God! so that's how  
people see me. I was disappointed I give you  
that.

I made my way out, I not in the mood for the  
party anymore, I went to my hotel room and laid  
on my bed.

Amanda called ke several times till I decided to answer.

Me: Yes.

Her: Where are you? everyone is waiting for you.

Me: I'm not feeling good, I need some sleep.

Her: what? theres no such, now if you...

Me: Fine I'm coming.

Her: Good now hurry up.

I dragged myself and went to the damn party.

Amanda: What's wrong with you? you seem far from here.

Me: You know this ass-hole of a lwyer called Mr Khumalo made my day a visit to hell.

She giggled.

Me: It's not funny, you know I cried after that case. He said I married Max for money..like really?.



Her: That never bothered you before, why now.

Me: I don't, maybe it just....I don't know the way he said it.

Her: do you like him?.

Me: What?...he's handsom and all that but I'm telling you he's an asshole.

She couldn't stop laughing.

Me:why are you laughing?.

Her:Because Yet again I meet someone who is irritated by Tyson's attitude.

Me: Tyson?.

Her: jea, Tyson Khumalo...the lawyer...He's my brother.

Me: ohh..emm he is not really an asshole just that.

She giggled.

Her: relax girl, I know what you mean.

Me: in that case, let the party begin.

I've never really like alcohol but tonight it seems like a perfect way to escape my problems.

I remember drinking a lot of wine, the rest I don't remember.

I wake up in surprise, I was perfectly tucked in, in my bed and there was a note on the side.

---You really gave us a hard time tonight, I didn't know you could take that much, anyways I'm glad I met you and I hope I will see you again, have a safe fight---

It's was signed with kisses at the end. I hold it close to my heart and then I remember I have an afternoon flight to caught.

I quickly get ready and in no time I'm on my way to the airport. I pass by Khumalo and partners law firm and curiosity draws me to walk in and give him a peace of my mind.

I walked inside with so much attitude, there was

no way I was going to ask the receptionist, I've had my fair share with receptionists.

I passed the receptionist and went straight to the offices.

Me: Excuse, I'm looking for Mr Khumalo's office, the receptionist did give me directions but stupid me I forgot.

she smiled.

Her: it happens to the best of us, come I'll show you.

We walked to the office.

Me: Thank you very much.

Her: You're welcome.

I breath in and out before I knock. I knock once and let myself in.

I find the shock of my when I walk in to Tyson making out with some white girl.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:

Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*5\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Tyson: What the fuck?.

Me: I'm...emm I'm sorry I didn't..

The lady got off him and started dressing up.

Him: you don't fuckin walk into someone's office.

I get that he is angry but he had no place shouting at me like that. The problem with Tyson is that he has an attitude and it stinks, I don't even know why I wanted to talk to him because he is such a jerk. He wouldn't understand anyways.

Me: I'll go, I'm sorry.

I took my handbag which I accidentally dropped

on the floor and exited. I can't even begin to explain how humiliated I felt, I don't even know why I walked into this building.

I drove off to the airport and within an hour I'm home.

The thing I get when I walk in is a punch across my face.

Me: Max, what the..

Him: You've grown balls, blackmailing me like that.

I was in a lot of pain, I was even bleeding from my nose.

Him: Too bad I'm the only one who's allowed to have balls in this house.

He took out a gun.

I closed my eyes. Dear God if this is how I die please forgive all my sins.

He did the evil laugh.

Him: You should see your cell right now.

Me: Max please, I'm sorry I blackmailed you but I swear I wasn't going to get you arrested.

Him: oh really.

He took my phone.

Him: well you made a bad choice and you have to get punished for that.

He brushed my face with the gun, I was literally shaking.

Him: You know what's going to happen now?.

Me: Please don't kill me.

He laughed.

Him: Kill you? no...why would I do that?...You are going to stay inside this house until I tell you otherwise, I tried reasoning with you but you decided to act bossy.

I couldn't stop the tears.

Him: Get out of my face before I do something

you will regret.

I quickly ran to my bedroom.

Amanda was right I should have divorced this bastard, and where the hell did he get the gun, I have to get out of here before it's too late.

I went to the bathroom and cleaned my face, I was in a lot of pain I had to take pain killers.

=====

A whole week passed by, I was still locked inside the house, I had no phone and I didn't know any phone number which could possible help, I couldnt call the police. Max have friends in high places the last time I reported him I ended up with more bruises on my skin.

Max: wakey wakey wifey.

I turned and faced the other side when he walked in.

Him: You know starving yourself will only affect you?

Me: I don't care, at least I will die other than being locked up in here.

Him: Whatever, be ready by seven o'clock tonight. We are going to a launch.

Me: I don't want to go, take Zodwa.

Him: Venus I am not asking you I'm telling you, this is your dress.

He tossed it on my bed. I looked at it and I chuckled.

Him: what's funny?.

Me: You are, I know the only reason you choose this dress is because it is less revealing, you don't want your partners to see that you hit me.

He got closer. He was irritated.

Him: I have a good idea to shut your mouth up right now, you talk too much. Be ready by seven.

He left the room.

+++++



I got ready and wore his damn dress, it was a nice dress I must admit but was not really my style.

Him: Don't try anything stupid.

I looked at him.

He must be crazy if he thinks I'm coming back home with him, He can kill me if he wants to but there's no way I'm going back to that hell hole.

The launch was very boring, well on my side...all I did was to flash a smile everytime he introduced me to his associates.

until My eyes landed on Tyson, what was he doing here?.

He was with some lady, not the one I saw him with the other day, what is he doing in KZN?. I needed to speak to him, I need Amanda's phone number.

Me: excuse me.

Max gave me a look.

Me: I'm going to the bathroom.

He still looked at me, his eyes were like "if you try anything stupid, you're dead". I smiled.

I walked to where Tyson was standing.

Me: Excuse me can I talk to you.

Him: Fuck it, are you following me?.

Me: What?.

Him: why are you always in my way?.

Me: please don't flatter yourself, Listen I really need your help. I need Amanda's number.

Him: then ask her.

I can't believe this guy is being like this, especially now.

Me: Tyson Please.

He looked at the girl next to him.

Him: let's go.

And they left just like that.

I had tears in my eyes. This is probably the end of me.

I went to where Max was sitting with his friends.

Me: I'll be outside, I need some air.

Him: I'll come with you.

man: No let her be Khanyile, I understand you want nothing where she's concerned but you know how women are, they need their time.

The all laughed, I smiled.

Him: Fine just don't be too far.

Me: okey.

I went and sat on the chairs outside, it was quiet and cold but what did I expect, it's winter.

I cried as I thought to myself, I'm trapped, I'll probably die in that house. I stood up and started walking around.

Me: I'm not going back to that house.

I said that to myself

I walked towards the back entrance and walked out to a very quiet street, It was a bit dark. I started walking very fast searching for a place with people, all I saw were hookers who couldn't possible help me.

I saw Max's car making it way towards me, I took off my hills and started running but the dress was not helping, I tripped and fell. Max pulled over and walked out, I stood up.

Him: You don't listen now do you?.

He took out his gun.

Me: Max if you come closer I'll scream.

He laughed.

Him: Do that, Give me one reason not to put the bullet on your head right now, You're useless anyways ,you can't even bare me a son.

Me: Maxwell please, I'm too young to die.

Him: You should have thought of that before you tried running. bye Venus.

before I could say anything I heard two gunshots and I was on the floor, I heard his car taking off. I couldn't keep my eyes open and that's all I remember, after that it was light out.

[Tyson]

I found Venus unconsciously laying on the road when I was driving back home, She had gun wounds. I really tried to ignore her and continue with my journey but I couldn't.

I took her to my house. Well at least she was shot on her arm, no critical places wounded, I believed she was going to make it.

I removed the bullets from her and placed her inside a bathtub.

It looked like she was gaining her consciousness back.

[Venus]

I felt cold and warm at the same time, I felt someone brushing me, I began to worry, I was

struggling to open my eyes.

I finally opened them and it was blurry. I panicked when I saw someone.

Him: Shii it's okey.

I calm down when I realised it was Tyson.

I looked around and I was completely naked in a bathtub.

I cleared my throat.

Him: Venus it's okey, I won't hurt you.

I leaned on the tub as he moved the wet cloth on my chest...all the way to my arm.

Me: ouch.

him: Sorry.

I looked at him and it seemed like the Tyson who was in front of me is not the one I had encounters with, he had a lot of care in his eyes.

Me: emm Thank you, for saving my life.

Him: It's okey....emm we are done here.

He stood up and gave me a towel.

Him: will you be fine?.

Me: Yes thank you.

He left the room.

I stood up and wrapped the towel around my body. I walked out of the bathroom only to walk in to what looked like a bedroom. I sat there and cried.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*6\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Tyson was not usually around, it's like he knew I need space. I don't know where to from here but I definately have to make a plan, I can't stay

in Tyson's house forever.

I heard a knock on the door.

Me: I'm coming.

I opened the door.

Me: Hey.

Tyson: Are you busy?, I'm about to have breakfast I was thinking that maybe you can join me.

Me: Thank you but I'm not hungry.

A little girl came running around the house, she looked five years or younger.

Him: Meet my daughter, Minenhle.

Her: Hi Venus, daddy said you're going to eat breakfast with us.

She sounded so bright, a little matured then her age but I could tell that she's actually young.

Him: actually sweetie aunt Venus is not feeling well, she'll join us another time.



Her: maybe you should read her a bedtime story.

He smiled.

Him: sweetie that is for bed time.

Her: I know but if you read to her she will sleep then she will be better when she wakes up.

I laughed.

Him: Nice seeing you smiling for a change.

I looked down.

Him: we'll be downstairs if you change your mind.

Me: actually, If I could find something more covering to wear I might just join you.

Him: emm how about a bathrobe?.

Me: That could work.

He disappeared and came back with it.

Him: We'll wait down stairs.

He put Minnie on his shoulder and walked

downstairs.

I expected them to be sitting around the table eating but they were sitting on the couch eating junk.

Me: Is that break fast?.

Him: Mavis will only be here an hour later.

Me: Mavis?

Him: yes my temporal house help, she'll be helping me while Minnie is here.

I sat on the same couch not too far from where they were sitting.

Him: honey go brush your teeth.

She stood and run around.

He started smiling looking at her as she was struggling with the stairs.

Me: I didn't know you had a daughter.

He smiled.

Him: you don't know that much about me.

Me: You're right about that.

I foulded my legs not realising my thighs were revealed.

I quickly covered them up when I realised he was looking.

Him: Venus, I saw them the time I was bathing you.

I looked down.

Him: He did this to you?.

I nodded.

Him: why don't you divorce him.

Me: I tried, He almost killed me.

I started tearing.

He moved closer and put his hand around me.

Him: I'm sorry, You shouldn't have endured so much pain.

I saw Minnie making her way down.

Me: Hey Minnie how about we make some pancakes?.

Her: yepppy...daddy let's make pancakes.

Him: oh no honey, I have to take a shower.

I took Minnie and made her sit on the kitchen counter.

Him: careful, you arm is not fully recovered.

Me: I'm feeling a lot better.

Him: mhh, do you mind watching her while I take the shower.

Me: No, you can go.

He left and Minnie and I started making pancakes.

It was more like messing the kitchen up then actually making pancakes, Minnie made sure there was floor everywhere.

Me: Pumpkin if you don't stop now this kitchen

will turn white.

She kept on giggling.

Her: It's so funny....yey.

I took her and put her down.

Tyson: wooh what happened here.

Her: daddy we are making pancakes.

Him: more like turning into pancakes.

Me: Sorry, I'll clean up.

Him: No, actually Mavis is just on her way.

We heard a knock.

Him: That must be her.

Me: In that case I got to get cleaned up.

Him: why?.

Me: first impressions last.

He chuckled.

Him: if you say so.

I went upstairs and took a long warm bath, I must say I was really having a good time here I felt more at peace, the thought of going out and facing reality just got me all scared.

[Maxwell]

It's been weeks and these idiots still couldn't find Venus.

I was on the phone with one of my man.

Me: I pay you a good fortune for you to tell me that nobody saw what happened to her body.

Him: No one is willing to talk.

Me: make them talk, give them money damn it I don't have to tell you how to do your job.

Him: I'll try harder boss.

Me: don't try do it before I get someone else.

I dropped the call.

An hour after I shot Venus, I asked someone to go and fetch her body but there was no body.

Now I know it can't just disappear someone must have found her and the fact that police hasn't knocked on my door it means she's still alive, question is who took her and where the hell on earth is she?.

[Tyson]

I heard Max is looking for Venus and it's only a matter of time before he finds out that she is here, I know there is no way I'm letting him take her and that can only mean one thing, war.

Venus: Dinner is ready.

I went and sat down.

I liked how she was starting to feel comfortable around me and that smile, mhh. Venus is beautiful in every perspective, she had on of those Kim Kardashian body, I couldn't care less about that but her heart, I've never met even one lady with such a good soul, it's like God lived inside her...now that is very attractive from a woman.

Me: The princess is sleeping already?.

Her: Yes she is, you know she has a lot of energy for her age and she quiet too clever too.

Me: I know, she probably got that from her mother.

Her: really, where is her mother?.

This is one topic I really don't want to talk about.

Me: She's dead.

Her: oh, sorry...I.

Me: it's okey.

Her: what happened to her?.

Oh now this is the question I've been avoiding.

Me: She got shot....let's change the topic.

Her: I'm sorry, I didn't mean to pry.

Me: It's OK, I just don't like talking about it.

She kept quiet for a minute.

Her: Tyson, Your girlfriend don't have a problem



with me staying here right.

I chuckled.

Me: You know you could always just ask if I'm single or not.

Her: well I know you are not.

Me: FYI I am and have been for nine months, I got dumped.

She laughed.

Her: oh my God, you're serious.

I nodded.

Her: why? what did you do?

Me: why do you always assume that guys are the wrong one.

Her: because they are always the wrong ones.

Me: well not in my case, She wasn't ready to be step mom and so she dumped and dated someone else who was my friend at that time but my number one enemy now.

Her: sounds hectic.

Me: it is, problem is she knows I can't get over her and she uses it against me.

She started laughing.

Me: it's not funny.

She couldn't stop laughing.

Her: excuse me but it just doesn't sound like you, I mean really, it's been nine months and you still can't get over a heart break.

Me: well I got feelings too.

She laughed as she stood up with the dishes, she placed them inside the dishwasher.

Her: well goodnight lover boy.

She laughed some more as she walked up stairs. leaving me smiling all by myself.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*7\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

I received a call from Skhumbuzo early in the morning.

Me: My man talk to me.

Him: It's a boy.

Me: Congrats my guy, I'm sure Amanda is thrilled.

Him: She is over the moon, just a little tired.

Me: It's a good thing she married a docter.

He laughed.

Him: Jea right, I got to go..I have a son to take care of.

Me: okey, we'll talk later.

I dropped the call.

Skhumbuzo is my friend and has been for a

long time, reason why I didn't have a problem with him marrying my sister is because I knew he could take care of her and make sure she's always safe, He's actually part of my crew and I know for sure that he has my back.

Today it's Venus's birthday, don't bother wondering how I know that because well point is I know and she's turning 28 years old. You can't really expect me to live in the same house with some I know nothing about.

I woke up early and prepared a very big breakfast for her, good thing Minnie is still sleeping I don't want her disturbing me while I cook.

Venus: Someone is up early.

I looked at her.

Her: Smells nice.

She came and sat down.

Me: Wanted to surprise you but hey, Happy

birthday.

She looked rather shocked.

Her: How did you know that?.

Me: You're welcome.

Her: Sorry, Thank you and I really appreciates it.

Me: But.

Her: You seem to know a lot about me.

Me: You were a witness on a case I worked on, of cause I know about you.

She smiled.

Her: Thank you.

Me: Like I said, you're welcome...

Her: Let me go get cleaned up.

Me: okey you do that...

She went for a shower and came back wearing shorts, shirt and sleepers. The shorts were not that short but I could tell she didn't have that

feeling of wanting to cover up all the time.

We ate in silence and Minnie joined us after a while.

Minnie: Daddy can I have warm milk.

Me: Honey, milk gives you a running stomach.

Her: Not anymore, granny let me drink it all the time and milk is good for my teeth.

Venus laughed.

Her: Pumpkin, you barely have teeth.

Her: More reason why I should drink milk.

Now I also think Minnie is a bit matured for her age.

Me: Okey.

I went to the fridge, unfortunately we were out of milk.

Me: Sorry honey we are out of milk, we gonna have to go shopping.

Venus: Can I come along?.

I really don't have a problem with going with her, problem is I can't risk someone seeing her and following her around to find out where she's staying.

I looked at her.

Her: I need to go to the bank, I need access to my savings, I don't have my bank card remember, and there are few thing I need to buy.

Me: Things like what.

She widened her eyes.

Her: Like a phone, toiletries and stuff.

Me:We'll go to the mall this afternoon.

Her: the banks will be closed by then?

Me: I'll give you money.

She looked at me in disapproval.

Me: You can pay me back when you've fixed your accounts.

Her: okey.

I am taking a huge risk but at least during that time there'll be less people on the mall.

[Venus]

Tyson is out on a business meeting, and I'm chilling with Minnie watching TV and listening to her silly but very funny stories. How I wish I had my very own little Minnie, but then again I think it's a good thing I never had children with Max because they'd be suffering right now.

Minnie: are we still going to the mall?.

Me: I don't know Pumpkin but I think your dad is on his way right now.

I must admit, I also had no idea if we were still going or not, It's 17:32 and shops will be closed in a few hours.

Her: Daddy said I shouldn't call you by your name.

Me: Really?.



Her: Yes, he said I should call you aunty but I don't like it.

Me: why?.

Her: I don't know.....why do you call me Pumpkin?.

Me: Because I love pumpkins and you are adorable.

Her: Then I will call you Candy.

Me: Why?

She giggled.

Her: Because I love Candy and I like you.

I smiled and hugged her.

Tyson walked in.

Him: Sorry, I'm late...let me change into something more comfortable then we can go.

He disappeared to his bedroom and came back wearing formal pants, T-shirt and a jacket. I must say Tyson is hot on another level, I mean

the body, the face...actually everything. even his eyes are capable of turning you on, on its own.

I snapped out of my dream world and we went to the mall.

Minnie was touching everything she could reach, Tyson ended up putting her in the trolley which refused at first but later on enjoyed.

We bought a lot of stuff from food to clothes and My phone.

Me: I need to go to the pharmacy I need something for the marks in my skin.

Him: Okey.

We went to the pharmacy, It was really late and Minnie was sleeping in Tyson's arms.

Him: Actually we'll wait her.

He suddenly acted strange as we were about to enter the pharmacy.

Me: what's wrong?.

He looked at the lady in the front desk.

Me: let me guess, that is your famous ex?

Him: And I'm not ready for her gloating face.

I laughed, like really? this guy got to be kidding me.

Me: Well you got to face her sooner or later, come.

I pulled his hand.

Me: Play along.

Him: Mhh.

I looked at him and talked to the lady.

Me: Excuse me, can we have one pack of trust condoms.

Tyson looked at me in shock and the girl couldn't stop looking at him in anger.

Me: Now please.

The lady walked over to the shelves.

Him: Condoms?.

I rolled my eyes at him.

The lady came back.

Me: Sweet heart my fiance and I decided we don't need condoms anymore , we are ready to give Minnie a little brother or sister.

I brushed Minnie's back, who was sleeping peacefully in his fathers arms. Then I went for the killer.

I moved closer to Tyson and deep kissed him, right there on the spot. Good thing he kissed me back, last thing I want is embarrassing myself.

Lady: Mhh hh.

Me: Oh sorry we wasted your time sweetie.

We walked out of the shops, laughing as we approached Tyson's car.

Him: I must say, That was...I dont even know

what to say.

Me: well you can just say thank you.

He smiled.

Me: I still can't believe your ex has you so much on her palm.

Him: well not anymore, thanks to you.

We laughed he put Minnie on her chair in the back sit.

He moves up and our eyes meet. He's right here in my face, we don't move just look at each other, I could feel his breath hit my face. Next thing we hear a camera sound and a flash light follows but the person run away before we can see him.

Tyson: Shit...get in the car.

He opens the door for me and rushes to his side and we took off. He's driving was very bad and fast, We got home and he very angry.

Him: Excuse me I have a phone call to make.

He leaves the room and I take Minnie to bed.

[Tyson]

Zach has some serious explaining to do.

Me: Zach what the fuck man.

Him: I know and trust me we'll find the guy.

Me: I thought you said the mall was clear.

Him: It was, we made sure that everyone who was there at that time was harmless.

Me: Well guess what?, You didn't because someone just took a picture of Venus and I, Max could be on our case as we speak.

Him: like I said we'll find the guy.

Me: Better, listen I can't take risks like this my daughter is here for good sake...I want you to up the security in my house as in like now.

Him: on to it, sorry again my man.

Me: It's okey.

I dropped the phone call.

I need to call my mother, she needs to fetch Minnie, I have a feeling that shit is about to go down.

Me: Mama D, sorry for calling so late.

Her: What is it now.

Me: I need you to fetch Minnie tomorrow, I have a lot going on and I can't watch her.

Her: But the winter holidays aren't over.

Me: I know Mah...but I prefer her with you right now.

Her: Fine, I'll fetch her.

Venus made her way into my room.

Me: Okey, Mah I got to go, talk tomorrow.

I dropped the call.

[Venus]

Me: I brought you coffee.

Him: Thank you.

Me: Tyson, what just happened what is going on?.

Him: Nothing you should worry about.

I can't get my finger around it but something is definately going on and Tyson is hiding it from me.

Me: Tyson If my life is in danger I'd like to know.

He moved closer to me and held both my hands..

Him:I need you to know that nothing will happen to you, I will make sure of it.

I just looked in his eyes and he looked right back at mine, Surprisingly I could tell actually I could feel that he meant every word. There's this strange thing about Tyson, it's like I've known him forever, everytime when I'm close to him, it's like I know him and that is crazy



because I don't but I still can't get over that feeling.

Me: Who are you?

He moved more steps closer and kissed me, I wanted to pull out but I couldn't, It felt so right.

He tightly grabbed my waist and I grasped. I felt lost in a moment, even my breathing changed.

This were getting steamy and I finally gathered strength and pulled out.

Him: I guess this is the part where you run off to your room.

He said that with his hands still tightly around my body, I really wanted to leave but it's like there was this magnet which drew me towards him and I couldn't get off.

Me: excuse me.

He removed his hands and I rushed out to my bedroom.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*g\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I got to my bedroom and just laid on the bed thinking about the kiss, I know I kissed him at the pharmacy but that was just a kiss to make his ex jealous and the second one was, well I don't know. I can't help but to feel it meant something but then again I can't be certain, Maybe it was just a moment and besides with Tyson I can never be sure, I once caught him with someone in his office and he has never mentioned their relation and from the look of things, He looks like a player and I'm so not ready to have my heart broken, but then again what am I saying because it's not like Tyson asked me out, He just kissed me and stupid me

responded... Ahh.

After I battled with my thoughts, I finally managed to sleep.

I was woken up Gun shots noise, at first I thought I was dreaming because after Max shot me I've had nightmares where there were gunshots but I realise I was very much awake when Tyson made his way to my room holding a gun.

I tell you now that all the sleepiness in my eyes just vanished.

Me: Tyson what's going on.

He came to me and gave me his phone.

Him: I'll explain later, now I need you to go to Minnie's bedroom, lock yourself in and call Zach, tell him we have company.

I was panicking, I just froze there.

Him: Venus, we don't have time.

I quickled ran to Minnie's bedroom, I could hear the noise of gun shots on my way but it sounded like the whole thing happened by the gate.

I got to the room and Minnie was peacefully sleeping.

I quickly called Zach and he picked up on the first ring, which was very fast on my books because it's midnight, I expect people to be in their dreamland by this time.

Me: Hi Zach, Tyson said I should tell you that he has company.

Zach: shit, on my way.

He dropped the call and I laid next to Minnie, cuddle myself with her.

If something could happen to Tyson or Minnie I could never forgive myself knowing that I put them in danger.

I closed my eyes and said a little prayer.

After a while the gunshot noise disappeared and I panicked, I don't know why because I couldn't wait for it to end but now I'm more scared because I don't know what happened.

I look at Minnie, She's still sleeping. She sure is lucky to be able to sleep with such noise.

Someone moved the door handle and I panicked, my heart was pumping very fast.

Him: Venus it's me.

I let out a sigh and opened the door.

Him: Are you guys okey.

I turned and looked at Minnie then right back at him.

Me: We're good, are you okey?.

Him: yes.

He walked out and I followed him.

I heard voices from the dining room and when we got there, there was these guys nje and a girl.

From all of then I recognised Skhumbuzo...Amanda's Husband.

Him: Venus, nice seeing you again.

Me: Hi.....everyone.

The lady smiled at me.

Guy1: I'm Zach and this is Candice my wife.

I smiled and gave them my hand to shake.

Me: Nice meeting you.

I looked at Tyson.

SK: Got to go man.

He fist bumped with Tyson.

And they all left.

I must say, I expected the house to be a mess but it had not even a small scratch. I thought Max was dangerous but by the look of things Tyson seems more dangerous. What did I get myself into?.

[Tyson]

I woke up in early in the morning and got ready.  
I need to pay Max a visit. If he thinks that the  
little stunt he pulled last night will scare me  
then he has another thing coming.

Venus: Where you going.

Me: I have some business to attend.

Her: you're leaving us alone?.

Me: Nothing will happen, trust me.

She got closer and held my arm.

her: Tyson please, don't leave.

One thing about Venus is, she's easily moved. I  
guess living with an abuser your whole life can  
do that to you.

Me: Fine I won't.

I got her close and hugged her.

I really need to have a chat with Max and soon  
rather than late.

Me: How about I call Candice, in that way you won't be alone.

She nodded and wiped her tears.

I called Candice and within a while she was here and I left.

[Venus]

I really didn't want Tyson to leave, What if the guys who are attacked last night came again and found me alone with Minnie?. I know I said I'll be fine with Candice but that is because I didn't want to sound like a cry baby and besides I'm not Tyson's problem.

Candice: So...how long have you guys been dating?.

Me: Oh No..we are not dating.

She looked surprised.

Her: I guess you are friends?.

Okey I don't really know how to label my



relationship with Tyson, I've never really thought about it.

Me: emm jea, you could say that.

She looked at me.

Me: He saved my life and emm I'm actually friends with his sister.

Her: ohh by the way how is Amanda managing with the newborn.

Me: Newborn?...She gave birth already?

She chuckled.

Her: you're her friend but you don't know.

Now I was really tongue tied, Tyson didn't tell me about Amanda giving birth.

Me: Emm.

There was a knock on the door.

Candice went and opened.

Her: Mama D.

She said in excitement.

MamaD: Hi child, what are you doing here?.

They walked in, the dining room.

Her: Tyson asked me to keep Venus company.

MamaD: You must be Bongani's girlfriend.

Me: Bongani?

I looked at Candice.

Her: Tyson.

Me: oh No we are just friends.

MaaD: exactly what I said, a girl-friend.

Candice and I laughed, This woman is funny.

[Tyson]

I made my way inside Max's house, two of his guys followed me in.

Him: Fancy meeting you here Tyson.

Me: I believe your baboons were in my house last night, now I wonder why because I don't

have bananas.

Him: oh really....Tyson let's cut things straight...bring back the girl.

Me: What girl?.

Him: stop playing games, you know the rules and she's mine.

Me: I know the rules but she came to me and she stopped being yours the time you put a bullet on her.

Him: She's my wife.

Me: I'm going to say this once, stay away from her and don't you dare try the stunt you pulled.

Him: If I can't have her then no one will.

Me: You must know by now that I don't work well with threats, Do yourself a favour and stay away.

I walked away. and he shouted.

Him: Maybe I should call Sizwe.

I turned and looked at him.

I walked closer and his security pulled a gun.

Me: Call him while you still can.

I made my way out to my car and called Zach.

Me: I got the car keys.

Him: Perfect.

I dropped the call and made my way home.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Your

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*g\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Tyson walked in and for whatever reason I feel  
at ease.

Him: The Princess is gone already?

Me:yes, she was quiet sad that she's leaving

especially without seeing daddy dearest.

Him: I guess I'll have to call her before I sleep then.

Me: Yes you do.

Him: Candice, thanks again.

Her: You know I got you.

she stood up attempting to leave.

Me: Thank you.....for staying with me. I really appreciates it.

Her: Don't sweat it.

Me: I'll walk you out.

We approached the door.

Him: Tell Zach that a nigga appreciates.

Her: will sure do.

I walked her to her car and left when her car took off.

I came back inside and Tyson was pouring a

himself a drink, with no shirt on.

I stood there and admired the beauty.

Him: You know starring is rude.

He said that with his back facing me.

Me: emm...I'll be in my room.

Him: wait.

I stopped and looked at him.

He walked closer to me, looking me straight in the eye.

He got so close, I could feel his body temperature, the warmth in him.

I slowly breath out.

He continued looking at me.

ohh God if this guy don't stop right now, my heart is going to stop. I know he did it intentionally, seducing me with his eyes like this.

after my long wait, he finally spoke with a very

sexy tone.

Him: I bought you your body cream.

He lifted his hand which had the cream and I shifted my eyes from him to the cream.

Me: Thank you.

I said, as I took the cream and walked upstairs.

-----

The next coming days were really good, No attacks or what so ever. I would stay alone during the day, I couldn't go back to the hospital, I was not ready so instead I help around a small community clinic here in KZN. Tyson has been very supportive and sometimes I wonder how he managed to change in such a short time, I mean the first time I met him he was this big selfish man.

Him: The marks are fading.

He said that while brushing my arm with his side of a thumb.

Me: Yes they are.

I smiled.

We were watching some reality show on the TV.

Me: Can you stop that.

He smiled.

Him: What?

Me: You're starring, and a wise man once said starring is rude.

He chuckled.

Him: Maybe that man has never seen this beauty, it is worth starring.

I blushed and looked down.

His Phone rang and he picked it up.

Me: I'll get us something to drink.

He nodded.

Him: Mama D.

Her: Your princess refuse to sleep before she



talks to you.

He chuckled.

Him: Give her the phone.

Her: Daddy.

Him: honey, how are you?.

Her: I'm okey daddy but I miss you.

Him: I miss you too princess and you know what?....daddy is going to fetch you when he is not working okey?.

Her: Okey Daddy, Is Candy with you?

Him: Candy?

Her: aunti Venus.

He laughed.

Him: Ohh she's here baby, hold on.

He signaled for me to take the phone.

Me: pumpkin, I hope you've been a good girl.

Her: Yes Candy I have.

Me: That's good to hear.

she continued telling me stories about almost everything till the call ended, well I think MamaD ran out of airtime.

Him: She really likes you.

I smiled.

Him: Candy.

He chuckled.

I playfully punched him.

Me: hey, only Minnie calls me that.

Him: She gave you a name and now you have three...I'm Jealous Palesa.

I looked at him as he smiles and I shake my head.

Me: Well what's it gonna be, Tea or Coffee?....Bongani.

I said that while plugging the kettle on and he looked at me surprised.

Him: I'm going to kill MamaD.

I laughed and he made his way towards me.

Me: What's wrong Bongani.

I laughed and he tickled me which made me laugh more.

Me: okey, okey I'll stop....Bongani.

He attempted tickling me again and I tried running but almost fell when he held, preventing me from falling.

I am very close to him yet again and I look at his lips this time, I don't know why but I just look.

Him: I'll have coffee.

he let go of me and go sit on the couch.

After a short while I bring him his coffee.

Him: Thank you.

He makes space for me but I still sit right next to him with my leg locked in his.

He looks at me and smiles. I just keep a straight face.

Everything is fine until the news broadcast about Max.

I jump and take the remote and increase the volume.

||||| Mr Khanyile was found by other road users unconscious after his car spiral out control and hit a pole by Alexandra road two weeks ago. Mr Khanyile was in intensive care all along and though he's out of danger he's still in a hospital bed. He believes his car was tempered with and he's giving a reward to anyone with info|||||

Me: Excuse Me.

I stood up.

Him: Venus are you okey?

Me: Yes I just...I just want to rest.

I didn't know how to react....I had absolutely no emotions towards this, I didn't know whether to

be happy or sad.

Damn it!. he's in a hospital bed and yet I feel he still has so much control towards my life.

[Tyson]

I must say, that's not how I expected Venus to react to the news but hey, I guess it took her by shock, I'm sure after she's digested the news she'll look to the brighter side.

I was in the kitchen making coffee when she walked in, all dressed up, she had a small bag with her.

Me: You're up early.

Her: yes...emm I couldn't sleep.

Me: nightmares?.

Her: No...not really, I was just thinking about this whole Max thing.

Me: oh, are you going somewhere?.

Her: Emm.

I could tell she wanted to say something but looked like she didn't know how to say it.

Her: I'm going to Max.

I must say, she hit me by surprise?.

Me: going to Max?.

Her: Yes...I need to see him...He needs me.

This girl got to be kidding, I went through so much trying to protect her, even put my daughter's life in danger.

I lost my cool.

Me: He needs you?...please say you're joking.

Her: okey that came out wrong.

Me: I'll tell you what is wrong...it's you running back to Max like a sick puppy.

Her: okey that was uncalled for.

We were both shouting.

Me: fine, get out of my house and don't you ever

come back.

Her: Tyson listen.

Me: No you listen, you're a selfish ungrateful human being and you disgust me nxi.

Her: Tyson.

Me: No Venus, what will happen if he tries to kill you, and succeed this time around.

Her: Why do you care?.

I was tired of trying to reason with her.

I got closer to her.

Me: you're right, I don't care.

She was in tears but I couldn't care less.

Me: You can go back to your darling husband.

She looked at me for a while then left.

Damn it!.

I said that while banging the door.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:

Forever Yours

◦

\*\*\*\*\*10\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I don't understand why Tyson is so mad over this thing. All I want is to go and see Max personally, I need to get rid of the hold he has on me.

I can't even be happy because every time I try to open up to someone I think of what he did to me. I know that not all people are the same but that's how it start right?, With someone showing you love and care and after a while they change and show you their true colours.

I am not ready to go through that again, I've suffered enough pain to last me a life time. Tyson is a really good guy but aren't they all are at the begining?.. Look at Max, He used to be this sweet teddy bear but He, He shot me and



left me to die.

I'm really grateful for what Tyson did but I think it's better the dog you know then a new one.

I stood by the door at Max's ward, He was sleeping.

A part of me wanted to take that pillow and end his life but I restrained myself. I attempted walking out when he woke up.

Him: Venus.

I turned and looked at him.

Him: Venus, you're here.

I looked at him with no emotions.

Him: Venus, Please I'm sorry.

Me: Why? Why Max?...what did I do to you?.

Him: I was just...I know it's no excuse but I wanted children so badly and...and when you couldn't bare them I got angry, I was hurt and I reacted on emotions.

Me: Hurt?..

Tears just fell down my cheek.

Me: Hurt?...I was the one who had to survive three miscarriages , three!..I never hit or call you names, you know why?

He just looked at me.

Me: because it was not your fault just like it was not mine, But you...you treated me like dirt.

Him: Venus I'm sorry.

Me: Well sorry is not going to help me get any better because even though you failed to kill me physically but emotionally you succeeded.

I wanted children just like you but right now I am really grateful that God made things the way they are.

Him: Venus I'll change, I'll get help.....any thing just don't...please don't leave me.

I wiped my tears and stood up.

Me: you'll never change Maxwell, you are a dog...always have been and always will be....

Him: Venus, I have no one.

I looked at him and stood up and left, with him shouting my name.

I went to the reception and asked for his doctor.

Me: Hi sir, I'm Mr Khanyile's husband.

Him: oh I'm glad you came to visit, did he say something to you about his hospital bill?.

Me: No...what about it?

Him: His medical aid is not up to date and therefore it can't pay, so he need to pay out cash.

Me: well he has money I'm sure that won't be a problem.

Him: except he doesn't trust nobody to give access to the money.

Me: That's emm strange...didn't his wife visit

him?.

Him: I thought you said you are the wife.

Me: No I mean the senior wife.

Him: ohh, No...apart from journalists no one has visited him.

Me: I see.

Him: Well I'm glad you're here, he needs to sort out the money issue so we can carry on with the surgery.

Me: Surgery?

Him: Yes, we need to cut his left leg, it's too damaged.

Me: OK, I'll talk to him. Thank you.

I went back to Max's ward.

His face lights up when he sees me enter the room. I don't know what's going on that filthy mind of his but he shouldn't get any funny ideas.

Him: you're back, thank you.

Me: The doctor needs you to pay upfront, before the surgery.

Him: I'm working on it.

Me: give the pin, I'll get the money.

He hesitates.

Him: Venus, you hate me. How can I be sure that you won't ill use my money?

Me: That's the risk you'll have to take.

He looks at me.

Me: You said you're changed, that means you'll start respecting me and you should know by now that I'm no goaldigger.

He gives me the pin and I have a good idea of taking all his money from him but I don't.

.

.

[Tyson]

The day I chased Venus out I thought she'd come back and we'd fix things, maybe get a chance to tell her that I love her but she didn't, I guess she still loves Max.

I was chilling with the guys after watching a soccer game.

Zach: I wish my students were as quiet as you.

Skhumbuzo laughs and tap my back.

Zach is a university professor.

Every guy in my crew holds a qualification in different profession. Skhumbuzo is a Doctor and I am a lawyer. Shakes and TD both own Trading companies and they co-head the other crew in Namibia.

SK: I can't believe Venus got you so hooked.

Me: Whatever man, in fact I think it's best she left our relationship would cause a lot of conflict.

SK: Either way, Thumbs up for putting Max in

that bed, that old man annoys the shit out of me.

Zach: We should stay alert, We just started war.

My phone rings.

Me: Have to go....I'm meeting up with Mama D and Minnie for late lunch.

We fist bump and I'm out.

[Venus]

Max was really making progress and I was staying with him in our old house.

Today I woke up with really good news, My application to Netcare Hospital in Pretoria was successful.

Me: Maxwell.

He stop eating and look at me.

I take out the documents and pass them to him.

Him: What's this?

Me: divorce papers.

Him: Venus.

Me: You said if I stay till you recover you'd give me what I want, this is it.

He let out a sigh and sign the papers.

Me: and tomorrow I'm going to Pretoria I found a job there.

Him: Venus you don't have to leave.

Me: I want to.

I stood up and went to finish packing. I have to see Tyson before I leave.

The drive to his place was very short, or maybe it's because I was very nervous.

I let out a sigh when I see his car parked at the driveway.

I knock a several times before he opens.

He was shirtless and looked surprised to see me, more like he didn't expect to see me.

Him: Venus.



Me: Hey, can we talk?.

Him: Venus can we do this some other ti...

I cut his sentence and shoot anyways.

Me: Tyson I love you.

Girl: Ty, who is it?

The same white lady walk down the stairs  
halfnaked.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*1 1\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I wanted Tyson to say something, anything but  
instead he just looked at me.

Lady: Tyson?

I guess she was waiting for an explanation from

Tyson.

I wiped the tear on my cheek and sniffle.

Me: I guess...

Words failed me.

I knew then that I have to walk away because if I dare say a word tears will just roam down embarrassing me more than I am already.

I turned and walked away.

I can't even begin to explain how stupid I felt,  
But then What did I expect from a guy like  
Tyson, girls go crazy when they see him and  
well he entertains them. God why am I so  
emotional?.

You know the feeling when you're trying so hard  
not to cry but tears just fall down anyway, that's  
exactly what was happening.

Max:Venus, my dear what's wrong?

Me: not today please Max.

Him: Dear talk to me...why are you crying?.

I just ignored him and went to get my luggage.

Him: Hey, I thought you said you're going tomorrow.

Me: Well I'm going today, I'm allowed to change my mind now aren't I?.

Him: Venus, my wife...talk to me.

Me: Ex wife.

I took my bags and put them in my car.

Him: Please don't go like this.

I slowly breath out.

Me: Bye Maxwell.

I started the car and took off.

I wanted to be far away from everyone and everything.

I wanted nothing to remind me of my past Tyson, Maxwell, everything and I know Pretoria

is not that far but it's a start.

All I'm planning on doing is to focus on me.

[Tyson]

Call me crazy but I just didn't know what to say or how to say it rather. I really didn't want to say something that will offend Sandy, I mean she's not my girlfriend but I had just had sex with her, I can't just be chasing her out because of another girl.

Not that I wanted to hurt Venus, I don't even know how to explain this without sounding like a player.

Sandy: Tyson.

Me: Mhh.

Her: I asked you if you'll be able to attend the meeting?.

Me: What meeting?

Her: Share holders meeting.

Me: oh jea I will fly there tomorrow.

Sandy is my personal assistance in the law firm that I'm working in, in Pretoria. We started having sex, well I can't remember but it has been a long time, She understands that our relationship is strictly about sex, nothing more nothing less.

Her: owk then.

I faked a smile.

Her: Do you love her.

I looked at her.

Her: The girl from earlier, she's same girl who walked in on us right?.

Me: Yes she is.

Her: Do you love her?.

Me: Sandy it's more complicated then that.

Her: then uncomplicate it.

I let out a sigh.

Me: What I can tell you is, I've never slept with her.

Though we are on a no strings attached relationship, we made rules to never sleep with other people at the same time we're sleeping together.

She smiled, faintly.

Her: No rules broken hey.....Tyson we also agreed that we will not stand in each others ways so if you love her which I believe you do, you should go for her.

I looked at her, surprised.

Me: You're really a nice woman, I didn't mean to disrespect you as a woman.

Her: it's okey, be free....I must say I've been feeling a bit trapped myself.

She laughed.

Me: You're amazing.

Her: Stop saying that, I might believe it.

We both laughed.

Her: I guess this is my que to leave.

We bid goodbye and she left.

It was afternoon and it was so quiet.

Everything I looked at around the house would remind me of Venus, from the kettle, she loves coffee to the TV, her obsessions about reality shows.

I laid in my bed and thought about how messed up everything was.

[Venus]

By the time I got here last night it was very late so I went to my hotel room and slept.

I wanted to sleep the whole week or better yet be in a Comma, anything to take away the pain but I can't do that, I have to go to work.

I woke up prepared myself and went to the

hospital.

Amanda: Look who's back.

We shared a hug.

Me: Mh I miss you and you look to beautiful....no

w I see what they meant about you being a two slice.

We both laughed.

Her: I'm glad you're back and you're just in time for the party of the year.

Me: who's ageing?

Her: well it's Mike's engagement party.

Me: Mike!

Her: Yes he finally popped the question.

Wow! that was, unexpected.

I didn't even bother asking who's the girl.

Me: Wow, congrats to him.



I don't love Mike, at least not in that way but I must say these news were.....I don't know what to call it.

[Tyson]

I decided to drive to Max's place, I need to see Venus, we had a lot to talk about.

Me: Where is she?

He laughed.

Him: She's not with you?

Me: don't fuck with me Max, where is she?.

Him: She's sleeping and doesn't want to be bothered.

I took out my gun and he got scared.

Me: there are no guides, no one will save you.

Him: then Kill, ruin your chances of ever finding her.

He chuckled.

I took out my phone and called Sandy.

Me: seems like I won't be making it to the meeting.

Her: I'll inform others....I guess I'll fly alone then.

Me: Talk later.

I dropped the call.

Me: Are we going to do this the easy way or the hard? I got all day.

He looked at me with a smirk, I got more angrier.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*12\*\*\*\*\*

{Short-I'll try to post another one tonight}

[Venus]

Amanda: Venus what's wrong talk to me.

Me: why would you think there's something wrong?

Her: You're awfully quiet, you don't want to go home and honey your eyes are red and that means you've been crying.

Me: Come on Amanda you know I'm not one to talk too much and besides I rather be here helping patients then to sit in that hotel room all by myself.

Her: and the eyes?.

I kept quiet and just looked at her.

Her: you know you can talk to me about anything right?...

Me: yes I know but right now I'd rather not.

Her: is it Max?

I raised my voice a little

Me: Amanda please.

Me: Sorry I didn't mean that.

I go stand by the window, looking at the cars outside and the lights. For a moment there I'm lost in my thoughts until Skhumbuzo makes his way in.

Him: Baby have you seen Ven..

I turned.

Him: Oh Good you're here.

He was breathing very funny, more like he has been running.

Me: What's going on.

Him: I need you to call Tyson and tell him that you're alive.

Me: what? why?

Him: He went all balastic on Max, he thinks that Max killed you.

Amanda: ohh No.

Me: I don't understand.

Him: Venus just call him.

I run to get my phone in my office.

Skhumbuzo and Amanda are waiting impatiently.

Me: He's not picking up.

Him: Fuck.

Let me text Zach.

He focuses on his phone while I try calling Tyson again but he sends me straight to voice mail.

Me: Amanda what's going.

Her: Tyson is going to kill Max, that's if he hasn't done it already.

Me: oh My God.

Him: Baby, please bring the car around, I need you to drive us to where Zach is meeting us with the Jet.

Her: I'm coming with you.

Him: No baby it's dangerous.

Her: He is my brother.

We're rushing around the corridor with people looking at us, Or I should say Amanda and Skhumbuzo as they are arguing.

Him: Baby please, you need to go home to our son okey.

She decides to let him be but I could tell she's not happy.

We get to what looks a ground, It was not actually a ground just a huge open space.

We go straight to the Jet.

Her: I thought you're going with Zach.

Him: He has to stay behind and get a few things sorted out.

Me: What thing? on second thoughts don't tell me.

Her: so you'll just go alone? no back up?

Him:Baby have faith in your man.

She semi-smiles.

Her: Be safe.

She kiss him.

Him: I love you.

Her: I love you too

we took off.

Within a few minutes we are inside Max's house.

Him: His Car is not here.

Me: that's strange.

I rush inside shouting.

Me: Tyson.

I turn the lights on and check every room but he's not here and so is Max.

Me: They are not here.

SK: I'll check the garage.

I followed him.

SK: not here either, this can't be right.

Me: what now?

SK: Let's get out of here.

We walk past the kitchen.

Me: oh My God blood.

He walks closer to check it out.

Me: Why is there so much blood.

His phone ring and he takes it out.

Him: Hello.

Tyson: SK, there's something you need to hear.

Him: Where are you?

Whispering.

Me: Is that Tyson?

Ty: I'm in the ware house.

Him: I'm coming.

He looked at me.



Him: I need the keys of the car outside.

Me: They should be....oh here they are.

I gave them to him.

He walked out and I followed him.

Me: Where are you going?

Him: I need you to take her back.

Talking to the guy inside the Jet.

Me: No I'm coming with you.

Him: Venus it's not safe.

Me: So is leaving me, what if something happens.

He stop to think for a second.

Him: Okey fine.

We drove in the middle of the woods, to a place where there were no houses just one big building which looked old and abandoned.

Him: Stay inside this car.

He took out a gun and gave it to me.

Him: I'll be back in a minute.

I looked out the window and saw Tyson's car.

Me: Tyson is here?

Him: Venus focus.

I looked back at him.

Him: Take this gun and you stay inside this car until I tell you to move.

Me: Fine.

[Tyson]

I heard someone opening the door I knew it was Sk.

Him: Ty, what's up.

We fist bump and I took some water and pured it on Max.

He shringes in pain.

I gave him a hell of beating.

Me: Start talking.

He coughs and breath out heavily.

Him: I'm not the one who killed Khanyi.

SK looked at me for further explanation.

Me: Explain your self.

SK: you lied....why?

Him: I didn't , I did force myself on her and I shot her but not in the head.

SK: Then who shot her to death?

Him: Sizwe.

Skhumbuzo lost his cool and punched him in his face.

He was shouting.

SK: you were covering for that barsted? what for?.

Him: He is my brother I had to save him.

Me: Well brother is not here to save you, I

clocked my gun.

SK: Tyson Don't....

I pulled the trigger before he could finish his sentence.

Voice: ahhh..

We both turned and I saw Venus.

She dropped something on the floor and put both her hands in her mouth.

She started moving backwards slowly, She was shocked like that.

Me: Venus.

She looked at me then at Max who had his head hanged down and she started running away.

I looked at SK.

Me: you had to bring her with?.

Him: She insisted.

Me: man!.

I dropped the gun and went after her.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

.

.

\*\*\*\*\*13\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

After an hour of running around the bush I stop  
to catch my breath.

Reality starts to kick in that I'm alone in a very  
dark place that i know nothing about, I can't  
even make out if i'm in north or west. I start  
crying because in honest truth I'm scared and i  
don't know why I decided to run in the first  
place.

Then the image of Tyson shooting Max plays in  
my mind, How can he be so heartless. He just  
murdered someone in cold blood and....and He  
shows no signs of regret.

I take my phone out of my pocket, Amanda is the only one I could think of right now, I need to get out of this bush before something terrible happens to me, I can't die. at least not now.

Me: Amanda!

Her: Venus, where are you guys?

Me; I don't know I left Skhumbuzo and Tyson in some building.

Her: left them?....why?

I started sobbing.

Me:He killed him Amanda, he just stood there and shot him.

I couldn't help it but cry.

Her:Venus where are you now?

Me: I don't know I'm in the middle of the woods and....and Amanda I'm scared.

Her: calm down honey, can you see the building?

Me: No, I've been running for quiet some time

now.

Her: Venus listen, you have to go back to the warehouse.

Me: what? No....I've just witnessed crime, I don't want to die.

Her: come on you know that Tyson could never kill you.

Me: still, I'm not taking chances.

I heard some noise, like someone or something was making a way towards me.

Me: oh My God someone is coming.

Her: Venus listen to me, It's not safe out there you have to go back to the warehouse.

I didn't pay much attention to what she was saying, I panicked and started running till i came across what looked like a boundary.

Me: shit! I'm stuck.

I looked around, searching for another path.

I heard noises, it was slightly a roar and whatever it was I could tell that there are dangerous creatures around here.

I took off my jersey and wrapped in around my waist.

I freaked out when I heard footsteps approaching.

I know it's crazy but I started thinking about the movie "Wrong Turn"...and how those innocent people were killed and eaten, call it paranoia but that's how scared I was.

I sat down, cuddled my knees and buried my face in them, whatever it is that gets to kill me. I don't want to see it.

Him: Venus.

I raised my head and see him standing right in front of me with a long thick stick.

i don't know but for some reason I'm glad he found me, I jump up and wrap my arms around



his neck. Surprisingly he hugs me back, tightly and I feel safe.

Him: let's get out of here.

He holds my hand and we walk back.

On our way, we're both awfully quiet and I decide to start a conversation.

Me: so.....are you going to kill me?

He looks at me and chuckle.

Him: why do you think i want to kill you?

Me: I witnessed a crime, one that you committed and as a Lawyer you know how witnesses can help or ruin cases.

He gives me a side smile.

Him: Why are you limping?

Me: I hurt my leg the time I was running.

He unexpectedly pick me up.

I scream because for a moment there i thought

he wanted to hurt me or something.

Him: Venus just relax.

I looked at him

Me: You still haven't answered my question.

Him: Do you think I'd run around the bush looking for you just so I can kill you?

Me: a simple yes or no.

he looks irritated but either way I'd like to know what my future looks like according to him.

Him:No.

He put me down and Skhumbuzo makes his way towards us.

Sk: Glad you're okey.

I faked a smile.

Sk: I took care of the body.

Him:Thank you bro!

They shake hands and side hug.

Tyson open his car door for me.

Me: I'll drive with Skhumbuzo.

He looks at me and I fold my arms.

Scared as I am of him right now but there's no way i'm letting him see that otherwise he'll just bully me around.

Him: Fine.

I hop inside max's car and Skhumbuzo and I drive back to the Khanyile residence with Tyson following us.

Me: I'll take the keys back inside.

Skhumbuzo nodded and he stood outside.

~

~

[Tyson]

I don't know what's taking so long, all they had to do is park the car and come back so we can drive back to my house.

It's midnight for heaven sake.

I decide to go inside the residence and check what's taking so long.

I find Skhumbuzo leaning against the car with his phone in his hands.

Me: Hey man, we have to bounce.

He gives me his attention.

Him: Just waiting for your girl, she went to place the car keys back.

Me: I'll go check on her.

I walk inside the house and realize she's in the kitchen judging from the fact that lights are on.

I find her kneeling down crying as she scratches the blood off the floor with a brush.

She notices me and stop.

She looks at me for a second and just break down into tears.

Me: hey..hey I'm sorry.

I hold her arms, trying to make her stand up.

She sniffles.

Her: it's okey, I'm fine i just need to get this blood of this floor.

She starts scratching again.

Me: Venus, look at me.

She stop and look at me.

Me: I'm sorry you had to see that ok, I'm really sorry.

She just breaks down and cry.

I try to make her stop and after a short while she finally does.

Me: I'll get someone to clean this place up, let's go.

We both stand.

She takes of the gloves and leave them on the floor, She heads upstairs and comes back with a disk.

I don't even bother asking her questions.

We both walk out to my car. We need to get Her and Skhumbuzo back to Pretoria.

She looks at me as we stand in front of the jet.

Her: Tyson.

i move closer.

Her: Here.

she gives me the disk.

Her: it's a Camera footage, from Max's house.

Oh shit!, I almost messed up. I forgot about the whole camera footage thing.

Me: Thank you.

She hops inside the Jet and they took off.

~

~

[Venus]

By the time we get to Pretoria, Amanda is

already waiting for us with the car.

Me: you can drop me off at the hotel.

Her: oh No honey, Tonight you'e sleeping over.

I sigh, I don't have the energy to be going back and forth with her so I just agree, besides i don't want to be alone...especially not now.

It's already dawn when we get to the house and Amanda prepares a warm bath for me.

I take my bath and doze off to dream land.

I don't know what happened but all of a sudden I'm in this dark room.

I try moving my hands but I realize they are tied at the back of the chair.

I freak out.

I hear some woman screaming and judging from the scream she's experiencing a lot of pain.

I starts to panic...wha'ts happening?

My head feels heavy and I'm kind of dizzy.

Me: Amanda!

I screamed with a very faint voice.

Me: someone help me!

A very buffy guy walked in holding a gun.

Him: you are making noise and I don't like noise.

Me: Please let me go, I promise i won't tell anyone.

He walks closer and clocks it.

Me: No no..please!...Please don't kill me.

I wake up just before he pulls the trigger.

My heart beats in a very fast pace.

Amanda came in rushing, I was sweating and crying.

Her: It's just a dream...shii.

She held and rock me back and forth.

Me: It felt so real.



[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*14\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Amanda suggested that I shouldn't go to work  
and I couldn't agree more.

A lot happened last night and last thing I want is  
having a breakdown in front of my patients.

I'm glad she's also not going to work, there's  
nothing boring like staying in someone's house  
without their presence.

Me: I'll have to do something to keep me busy  
though before I go crazy.

Her: Something like?.

Me: Well my laptop and car is at the hospital so  
I don't know.

Her: I have an idea...why don't you help me prepare brunch for the guys.

Me: uh owk, that could work...at least I won't have to think about last night.

Her: owk get cleaned up, I'll be in the kitchen.

She left and I bathed and wore one of her dresses.

I'm a bit thicker then her so the dress was tight, not in a bad way though....it's just hugged me in all the right places.

It's true what they say after all, other peoples clothes can suit you so well like it was made for you. I wear a bit of make-up , I might not be going to work but I don't want to look like a ghost with these eyebags on my face.

I walked to the kitchen and I noticed is was kind of full in the dining room. There were like 5-7 guys and damn they looked good.

Oh No, Tyson is also here.

What on earth is he doing here?.

I went to the kitchen and pulled Amanda aside.

Me: you didn't tell me there're visitors.

Her: I told you I'm preparing a meal "For the guys".

Me: I thought you were talking about Skhumbuzo and Lwazi.

Lwazi is her son's name.

She laughed.

Her: You can't really expect me to call my son a guy.

She said that laughing even more.

Me: Whatever!.....where can I help?.

Her: You can peel the veggies for now.

Me: I can do that.

We cooked while talking about random things like TV shows and some little work gossip..I

was having a good time. After sometime the food was ready.

Me: I'll be in my room.

Her: No No No, you're not leaving me by myself.

Me: aren't we done?

Her: you have to help me take the food to the guys.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: "The guy".

Apparently they are all members of The Crips, a gang which was co-founded by Tyson and Skhumbuzo.

Me: fine, I'll follow you with the other tray.

We did just that, at first I planned on leaving the food and walk out but then I figured that I have to greet them just to show respect.

Me: Sanibona.

I decided to go Zulu on them

I said that while placing the food on the table.

Guy1: she speaks Zulu?.

Skhumbuzo laughed and the others joint him.

I looked at Tyson who also wanted to laugh but restrained himself.

Guy2: Don't mind them.

I faked a smile and walked out.

Me: I'll be in my room.

Her: not before you've eaten.

Me: Amanda if you're thinking about me dining with " The guys" then you got another thing coming.

She laughed.

Her: No silly, you'll eat with me.

I let out a sigh.

Her: I could never punish myself like that, sitting with Skhumbuzo and his gang talking in a

language I don't know....Never!

We both laughed.

The guys left around 19:00 pm, I was so tired, with all running around, cooking and all that I decided to go to bed early.

I heard Amanda and Skhumbuzo arguing but I decided not to involve myself, they are married after all.

~

~

[Amanda]

I hate it, I hate it when Skhumbuzo take drastic decisions without talking to me first.

I was shouting.

Me: Well it doesn't matter Skhumbuzo because you've already decided, what's more to talk about?

Him: Baby please calm down.

Me: Calm down?...did you even think about Lwazi? Me?...our lives will be in danger!.

Him: Your lives are already in danger...that's why we have to go back to the gang full time.

I started crying, I was so angry.

Me: fine Skhumbuzo do as you please.

I walked out of the room and banged the door.

I knocked in the guest room Venus is currently occupying.

Her: Come in.

She was nicely tucked in bed.

Me: sorry I woke you up.

Her: No it's okey come in.

I sat on the bed with her.

Her: Is everything okey?

Me: Yes, it's just Skhumbuzo getting on my last nerve...can I sleep here tonight?

She nodded and someone knocked, I went to open the door thinking it was Skhumbuzo but it was Tyson.

I looked at Venus and she signiled that I can let him in.

Me: I'll be in the dining room..

I tapped on Tyson's arm and left.

~

~

[Venus]

Tyson has been awfully quiet since he walked in here.

All he did was walk around the room until he decided to sit down on the bed, not so far from where I was sitting.

Me: I thought you left already.

Him: I brought your car.

He handed me the keys.



Me: Thank you.

It seemed a bit ungrateful asking about my laptop so I let it go, besides I can fetch it myself tomorrow.

Him: Amanda says you've been having nightmares.

Me: emm yes but it's nothing.

Him: is it about Max?

I shock my head.

Him: What then?.

I remained quiet.

Him: maybe you should seek professional help.

Me: No I'm fine.

Him: Venus you're n....

I lost my cool and shouted unintentionally.

Me: I said I'm fine!.

He didn't respond he just looked at me.

Me: I'm sorry.

Him: It's okey...goodnight.

He stood up and approached the door.

Me:Tyson.

He turned and looked at me.

Me: Please don't go.

He came and wiped my tear.

I really didn't want him to go. I just felt safer with him around.

Him: Come with me, to my house.

Me: oh No, I don't think I'm in a mood of driving or flying all the way down to KZN.

He chuckled.

Him: No I mean my house here in Lombardy Estate.

I battle with my thoughts for a while but I decided to agree.

Me: okey lets go.

He smiled, revealing his shallow dimples.

He gave me his jacket and we went, passing Amanda who was eating Ice-cream in the dining room.

Him: are you trying to catch flue?

Her: Blame it on your dear friend, anyways going somewhere?

Me: actually yes.

Him: She'll spend the night at my house.

Her: traitor.

She directed that to me whispering and I laughed.

Me: Sorry.

We drove off to Lambardy estate.

I thought Tyson's house back in KZN was big but this one was on another level. It was more like a B&B...A huge one at that.

Me: You're living alone in this huge house?.

Him: well you could say that, but I do have house helpers if they count on your idea of "living alone".

He demonstrated that with his hands.

I playfully punched him.

Me: you know what I mean.

He chuckled.

Him: Come, I'll give you a little tour.

We went around the house with him leading the way.

Me: Tyson, does having two cars, exactly same model make sense to you?

He smiled.

Him: I couldn't choose between the blue and black colour.

Me: So you took them both?.

Him: Yes...Why do I get the feeling that you're objecting.

Me: No, I'm not.....I just...it's actually my dream car.

Him: really?.

Me: Yes...and should be blue in colour.

Him: let's hope you dream come true.

I smiled.

We went back inside and he made us coffee.

I smiled because I love coffee and he makes it just the way I like it.

Him: Venus.

I looked at him.

Him: sooner or later, people will realize that Max is missing.

I let out a sigh.

Me: Can we not talk about him please.

Him: I know it's a sour topic but..

He realized I was getting emotional and so he stopped.

He knelt down before me.

Him: Venus I might be a monster in your eyes right now but I did what I thought was right, He assaulted Minnie's mother both physically and sexually...They killed her...him and his brother killed her.

I could tell how hurt he was and I didn't want to add on and besides I don't care about Max, he became dead to me the first time he decided to lay his hand on me, I just didn't like that the fact that Tyson could be just like him but either way my feelings for him remains.

Me: I don't..

I breath out..

Me: I don't think you're a monster.

He raised his head and looked at me, I put my

hand in his cheek, It was warm given that I've been holding this cup of coffee, he put his hand on top of mine.

Him: Venus...you're going to be number one suspect in Max's missing case...but I promise you I will do anything and everything to prove your innocence.

Me: that's won't be necessary...Max and I are divorced...Zodwa will get to be the first suspect.

He widened his eyes, I bet he didn't know about that.

I sipped my coffee and went to the Kitchen with him following me.

I turned and land myself in his arms.

He kissed me without giving me a chance to reject the kiss or even think about it for that matter.

He pulled out after sometime, My eyes were still closed and when I opened them he was looking

at me.

He smiled.

Him: I love you too Venus.

Stupid tears just decided to deceive me and He continued smiling.

I wrapped my arms around him and he tightly hugged me.

One thing I can tell you is that it felt so good.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*15\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

We've been staring at each other for sometime now. I could tell Venus wanted to look away but she was reluctant.



Me: You don't have to be so stubborn.

She smiled and looked down.

I kissed the top of her head.

Me: Come, I'll show you where you're sleeping.

Her: You'll sleep with me right?.

I looked at her and she adjusted her eyes,  
making them smaller.

Her: I don't mean sleep with me as in like sleep.

She used her hands.

I chuckled.

Me: I know, come...we'll sleep in my bedroom.

I mumbled something and unfortunately she  
heard me.

Me: ai women pretending to hate sex.

She playfully pushed me.

Her: well I do.

We got to the bedroom and got inside covers.

Me: Why is that?

She looked at me.

Me: you said you hate sex?.

She got uncomfortable so I decided to let her be.

I switched off the side lamp and kissed her goodnight.

There was silence for a few seconds until she put her head on my chest.

Her: I think sex is over rated...I don't know maybe it's because of the way I was introduced to it.

She kept quiet and I used my hand to brush her hair.

She let out a loud sigh.

Her: Well at least he waited for me to finish school first, those were my conditions...that I will bare him a son after I've graduated..but...but

things didn't go as planned..I would get pregnant and after some time miscarry. after the first one he...they showed support and care but after the second one things went bad, that's when the beating and insults started and to make matters worse I had miscarried third baby. I let out a sigh.

I hate seeing her hurting and I wish I can do something, anything to take all the pain away from her.

Me: Venus.

Her: mhh.

Me: I'm sorry baby, I'm sorry you went through all the pain.

Her: it's okey, it's not your fault....I'm glad I won't have to deal with him ever again.

I brushed her back.

Me: Get some rest.

I kissed her forehead and after sometime we both drifted to sleep.

I was woken up by Venus screaming.

Her: No! please don't!....I promise I won't tell anyone please!...No!.

Me: Venus.

I picked her in my hands and rocked her back and forth.

Me: Shiiii....it's just a dream.

She was sweating and I could tell how scared she was because she was shaking.

Me: it's okey....I'm here.

She was sobbing.

She couldn't even speak all she did was breath heavily.

Me: Hey...Hey...look at me.

I cupped her face.

Me: It's just a dream okey.

She nodded and I put her on my chest and after some time she calm down.

I must have fallen asleep because I woke up and found Venus not next to me.

I freaked out at that instant.

I was running around the house searching for her.

I found her sitting on the high chair in the kitchen counter, wearing my rope and drinking something which I assumed was coffee.

I let out a sigh.

Her: are you okey?

She put the cup down and came my way.

Me: Yes, it's just emm I thought you left.

She smiled and went back to her sit.

I hugged her from the back and kissed her head.

Her: well I'm here.

Me: And I'm glad you are.

Her: Can you dropped me at the hotel?...I need to get back to work.

Him: I have an idea...why don't you move in with me?.

Her: woo, baby steps okey.

She kissed my cheek and stood up.

I followed her to the ensuit bathroom.

Me: okey at least move in temporally.

Her: It's still moving in and it's a bit too soon.

Me: Why? we've lived together before.

Her: things were different then.

Me: Okey atleast say you'll think about it.

Her: fine I'll think about it.

I kissed her and walked out.

Me: Sturbon.

She shouted from the bathroom.

Her: I heard that!.

I laughed.

Venus brought this side of me that I last saw a long time ago.

She brought feelings that I found hard to explain, All I know is I love her. It may sound a little premature but I can't wait to spend the rest of my life with her.

After she finished bathing I drove her to her hotel and then to the hospital.

I needed to pass by the firm before my meeting with the gents.

Sandy: Well hello Mr.

She said that while entering my office.

Me: Hey beautiful.

She smiled.

Her:I brought the files you requested.

Me: Thank you.

I started looking at them.

Her: oh and you need to call Mr Ntabeni, and while you're at it make sure you have all your charm with because he's not happy.

I chuckled.

Me: I'll handle him.

After some time I left the office to meet the gang.

Me: gents!.

Zach: ta Tyson.

SK: like I said, we'll need more guys.

me: More guys?

Zach filled me up on the plan to track Sizwe down. Khanyi might have been my wife but she was very close to everyone in the gang, we're more like a family and Skhumbuzo blamed himself after she was kidnaped because he was



suppose to fetch her from work that day.

Me: Well I heard Sizwe is working with some russian Mafia, apparently they are in Congo.

Zach: Congo it is then.

Me: we can't be reckless about this so I suggest we plan carefully before acting.

SK: yes, and we don't want the Russian mob on our case.

Me: oh Sizwe is going to regret ever crossing paths with me.

Zach tapped me on my shoulder, he could tell I was getting angry.

The meeting went on for a while but eventually we were done and went our separate ways.

~

~

[Venus]

After work I was so tired, given the fact that I

didn't sleep a wink.

I decided to go to the hotel and get some rest.

I took a long warm bath before going to bed. It was around 18:00 when I heard a knock.

Me: I'm coming.

I went to open up.

Him: Ms Venus.

Me: That's me.

Him: Please sign here.

I signed and then took the huge box which was nicely wrapped.

I closed the door and went to open the gift box.

It was a nice lace red dress and a pair of matching hills.

I read the card and smiled when I realized it was Tyson.

=====Kindly join me for dinner tonight,

20:00pm....I'll pick you up # Candy =====

I took my phone and texted him.

Me: 20:00pm it is then.

I went to fix myself and got ready, in honest truth I couldn't wait to see Tyson, we've managed to grow fonder in just a short space of time...each minute away from him felt like torture and that scared me because I've never felt that way before.

The dress was too much though so I decided to wear my red bandage dress with the hills he brought.

Around 19:30 he picked me up.

Him: wow! you.....you look beautiful.

I blushed and got inside the car.

I was glad he didn't mention the dress because I had no explanation besides the fact that I didn't quite like it.

Me: I thought we're going out?

Him: We'll have dinner in my house.

Me: okey.

He focused on the road and I was playing with my phone.

We finally got there and he lead me to where we are to have dinner, in the balcony.

It was nicely organised, it looked so amazing and cozy with all the caddles and red flowers on the table....and the food smelled delicious.

Him: Don't just stand there.

He pulled the chair for but I remained standing by the door.

Me: Can't we have dinner somewhere else....around the house?.

He gave me a quizical look.

I breath in and out.

Me: I'm joking.

I faked a smile.

I slowly walked towards the table and he approached me.

He suddenly lifted me up and swang me around and I panicked ended up screaming.

Me: Tyson stop.

I hit his shoulders and He chuckled.

Me: it's not funny.

I said while forcefully getting out of his grip and walking out.

Don't get me wrong...I really appreciated what Tyson did for us but the thing is, I'm scared of heights and I guess Tyson figured it out when he saw me getting scared....I could do with a little bit of highness but that balcony was way too high for my liking.

Him: I'm sorry.

I wiped the tear off my cheek with the back of

my hand, making sure not to ruin my make-up.

Him: Mara Venus uyatefa.

I rolled my eyes.

Him: I'll move the food to the sitting room.

I nodded.

He did just that and in no time we were sitting around eating.

Me: Tyson, what is it that you do?

He cleared his throat.

I stopped eating.

Me: you move between KZN and GP like it's nobody's business, you have houses in both provinces, why?.

Him: oh, I....Most of my businesses are in KZN, I'm a partner in a law firm on this side so that's why I have a house here but my home is in KZN.

Me: I see.

Him: Why do you ask?.

Me: Nothing, I just wanted to know more about you.

Him: Okey.

He smiled

We continues eating and after, I helped him wash the dishes.

Me: I guess we'll call it a night.

He didn't respond he just kissed me and I kissed him back.

Things got hot and we decided to take it to the bedroom.

The kiss got intense with every passing second and I couldn't wait to feel him inside me but out of the blue I had a flashback of Max forcing himself on me and I pushed Tyson off me.

Him: are you okey?.

Me: Sorry, I...I think I should go.

I started dressing up.

Him: Venus talk to me.

I didn't say anything I just focused on dressing up.

Him: I'll drive you.

I couldn't tell if he was angry or disappointed.....All I saw was the worry in his eyes

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: °

°

\*\*\*\*\*16\*\*\*\*\*

CROP TOP-----I'll post a continuation.

[Venus]

I made it my mission to avoid Tyson. I was not ready to explain myself because in honest truth I also didn't know what was happening with me, one minute I'm happy and then the next I'm suffocating in my own thoughts.



Maybe I rushed into things, maybe I should have waited a bit longer before starting a new relationship.

It's funny though because deep down I have this feeling that Tyson will never hurt me, at least not sexually and I tried by all means to listen to that feeling the time I was with him but I failed. I'm sure he thinks I'm being childish or I'm playing hard to get, well I'm not.

I think I have to deal with my demons first, on my own before I move on.

Well today I have my first appointment with my therapist, actually Amanda hooked me up.

I must say the fact that it's a He, will make the situation even more awkward.

Him: Dr Johnson.

Me: Please call me Venus.

We shock hands.

Him: I'm Mr Nzama....please follow me to my

office.

I did just that and we went to his office.

Him: Feel at home.

He pointed at the couch and he sat on the chair opposite me.

Him: how are you feeling today?.

He asked as he took a notepad and a pen.

Me: I'm good thank you.

Him: your friend told me that you're dealing with a bad past, one that you're finding hard to get away from?.

Me: Yes I am.

Him: Tell me about it ..what happened?

I cleared my throat.

Me: Huh.

I breathed out heavily.

Me: Where do I start?

Him: Start at the begining.

Me: Begining mh, well I was married to a very old man who abused me and people didn't want to help me because they looked at it as my punishment for marrying a rich old man for his money but that's not true.

I was speaking very fast and I ended up getting emotional.

Him: Venus..breath.

I stopped for a minute and focused on my breathing.

Him: okey let's start again stepwise, tell me about your childhood, how was life back then...before you got married.

I sniffed.

Me: Life was good...I was raised by a single parent, my father.

My mother died before I got to know her.

I stopped.

Me: Can I stand up, I'm a little uncomfortable.

Him: Feel free.

He demonstrated that with his hand.

I started walking around the room as I talked to him.

Me: My father did a very good job raising me up, I had everything I needed, the love, care...everythi

ng and then he became sick and eventually died.

Him: Here.

He gave me a tissue and I wiped the tears off my eyes.

Him: Carry on.

He kept on writing as I told him about the events of my life.

Me: and then I had to move in with my aunt.

Him: your father's sister?

Me: Yes, things were not that bad with her they were just different from when I lived with my father.

Him: how did your aunt treat you?

Me: Well like most of the kids she'd punish me.

Him: by beating you up?

Me: Yes.

Him: how did that make you feel?.

I sighed

Me: I don't know....angry I think but eventually I accepted that she hate me, I made peace with it.

Him: why do you say she hate you?

I got emotional.

Me: She forced me into marrying a man who was old enough to be my father, she knew I was not happy and as my aunt she was suppose to protect me but she didn't.

I was sobbing.

Him: Let it all out, scream if you have to.

I hated how calm he was and that on its own made me cry more.

After some time, I was tired...I had no strength, I couldn't cry anymore.

Him: You're ready to continue.

I nodded.

Me: He was not bad at first and I warmed up to the idea of being his wife but he changed...he changed to this huge devil's creature, In fact he was devil on earth.

Him: Venus, may I ask...where is your husband now?

I looked at him quizically.

Him: You keep saying "Was" as if he is no more.

I looked at him thinking of a quickest convincing lie.

~

[Sizwe]

I was having fun with my girls in my hotel room when Antonio barged in looking like he was ready to kill.

Him: what games is your brother playing at?

Me: Hey.

I got out of bed and wore my boxers.

Me: ladies, please excuse us.

They tipitoeed their way out, butt naked.

Me: What's wrong?.

Him: The shipment from RSA is two weeks late, there are no explanations,nothing!.

He was fuming in anger.

Me: My brother is responsible for the drugs delivery on that side.

Him: exactly, and I've been calling him since

Wednesday and he's not picking up.

Me: Calm down I'm sure there's a logical explanation behind this.

Him: better be, because I'm telling you right now....if

your brother is double crossing me..

He gave me a stare, one that said "you know what I'm capable of".

Him: fix this.

Me: I'm on it.

He made his way out.

I wonder what got into Max, he knows how dangerous Antonio is.

I took my phone and dialed his number, it took me straight to voicemail.

Damn it!

Me: Buda, Antonio is not happy and we both know that's not a good thing, get back to me



ASAP.

I threw the phone on the bed and went to pour myself a drink.

I needed something strong to keep me calm.

Fuck!...Max is playing a very dangerous game and he's involving me in the process.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*Continuation\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Him: Dr Johnson I can't help you if you don't tell me the truth.

I knew he was going to use the "Doctor-patient confidentiality" on me but we all know that don't work in the court of law, and I was not ready to sell Tyson out to the authorities.

Me: I refer to him like that because I believe our relationship is dead.

Him: I see....I believe you have a new partner now?.

Me: Yes I do.

Him: how does this new partner treat you?.

Me: He's good to me, he gives love, care and support..All the things that my life long for.

Him: then what seems to be the problem?.

Me: The other night we had dinner in his house, everything was good and when it was time for me to go back to the hotel things heated up.

I was a little embarrassed talking to an elder about such.

Me: to cut the story short, we couldn't be intimate because I had a flash back of the time Max sexually abused me.

Him: what do you think triggered it?...was he

rough?

Me: No..he was not rough..I don't know what happened.

Him: Mhh.

He continued writing on his notepad.

He: When you explained to him, what did he say?.

Me: well that's the thing, I didn't and he doesn't know about the sexual abuse.

Him: Venus..you can't keep secrets from your partner especially not this kind of a secret.

Me: I tried, I told him everything but that.

Him: why didn't you tell him about the sexual abuse?

Me: because I don't want him to leave me...men value their pride and no one would want to be with someone who went through all that I went through.

Him: Nevertheless you need to give them the chance to decide for themselves.

Me: what if he decides to leave me?.

Him: then you'll move on knowing that you didn't keep things from him. you don't keep a person by lying to them and if he loves you like you say he does, your past shouldn't be a problem.

I let out a sigh.

Me: You're probably right.

Him: I am, Venus talk to him and let everything be in the open and if he rejects you, don't feel sad...it's his loss.

I stood.

Him: I guess this is it for today.

We shook hands and said our goodbyes.

After my session I decided to skip work and go to my hotel but I couldn't stay in for too long

because I kept on thinking about Tyson and how I'm going to tell him about the sexual abuse.

Mr Nzama was right, he deserves to know and I'd rather tell him now and be disappointed than to live my life with such a secret, I wouldn't be at peace.

I finally decided to drive to his house, it was just after six so I prayed he was back from work.

I drove by Mugg n Bean first, I needed a strong coffee to calm my nerves down and I decided to get muffins for him as an apology gesture...for walking out on him and ignoring him these past days.

The drive to his place was so short and my nerves started to kick in as I approached the door.

I knocked twice and he opened the door looking handsome as always.

He looked surprised to see me on his door step though.

Me: Hi!.

Him: Hey!...Venus.

Me: I come bearing gifts.

I raised the box with muffins with a faint smile on my face.

He smiled revealing his sexy shallow dimple.

Him: come in.

He moved out of the way and I made my way in.

I sat on the high chair in the kitchen counter and placed the cakes on top.

Me: you know the way I like it right?.

He chuckled and plugged the kettle on.

okey, atleast he is not angry..now all I have to do is deliver the news to him.

Me: Tyson...we have to talk.

He looked at me and came my way. I looked right back at him.

He held my hand and led me to the dining room.

He sat on the couch and i sat next to him.

Me: Max used to force himself on me.

I said that without stopping to think about it.

There was silence for a while, you could literally hear a needle hit the floor, He didn't expect that at all.

I tried to look for another way to say it but I couldn't find it so I decided to tell it like it is.

I got a little emotional but I didn't cry.

Me: That's why the other night I couldn't...you know.

I looked down.

Him: Come here.

He opened his arms and hugged me as I laid my head on his chest, usually that would make me

cry but I decided not to cry and to my surprise, even my tears obeyed me.

Me: what I'm trying to say is that I'm sorry for the way I acted.

Him: hey, it's not your fault.

He kissed the top of my head

We sat there having no words exchanged and I was glad because I didn't know what to say.

Him: I also have something to tell you.

I raised my head from his chest.

Him: I'm not who you think I am.....I'm a gangster, a gang leader.

I breath out.

Me: okey.

I wanted to say more than "okey" but that's the only word I managed to utter.

I mean Amanda did mention Tyson being a gangster.



Him: I love you Venus, I want to be the one person who give you happiness, someone to share your life with.

Me: You can still be that person.

Him: I don't know..I work with very dangerous people, I'm not good.

Me: I know you won't hurt me.

He stood up and turned his back on me.

Him: people will want to hurt you to get to me, I can't gaurantee your safety.

I stood up and went around him, I looked him in the eye.

Me: I trust you.

He flashed a smile.

Him: are you always this sturbone.

He wrapped his arms around my waist.

Me: only when I'm with you.

He kissed my forehead.

Him: move in with me.

Me: I'm still thinking about it.

him: I can't protect you when you're living in a hotel.

Me: now you're going to use that against me?.

He chuckled and I got out of his hands and went to the kitchen.

~

~

[Sizwe]

I've been calling Max for days now and still he's not picking up.

That's unlike him, Even if he wanted to double cross Antonio with his stuff he would've have given me a heads up. He knows Antonio could kill me and he would never throw me to the wolves.

I was on the phone with Sbu, my guy from RSA. He's not really my guy but he owes me a favour and so I made him look for Max.

Me: and?.

Him: He hasn't been home for weeks now, His house helper last saw him last month.

Me: Where are the wives?.

Him: They don't live there anymore.

Me: Where are they?

Him: I'm not sure.

I could tell he was hiding something.

Me: you do know that if you're hiding something from me I will find out and you'll pay the price... along with your family?.

Him: The senior is in Durban, in a flat called Shalom, She's living with some old loaded pimp.

Me: What?...My brother is missing and she's busy hoering?.

Him: She's been staying there for quite sometime now, even when brah Max was still around.

Me: I warned him about that goal digger....what about the young one?.

Him: She's also living with someone but in Pretoria.

Me: What is wrong with these women, Fuck!...they'll pay for messing with my brother...I need you to send a massage to their Boyfriends...tell them to fuck off before I land my feet in RSA.

Him: both of them?.

Me: No, none!...ofcouse both of them.

Him: ai Brah Sizwe..I can't...find someone else.

Me: Yes you can and you will...need I remind you that you owe me?...now don't let me Kill you for just a simple task.

Him: Well if I mess with ta Rico I'm good as

dead.

Me: Rico...what does he have to do with this?.

Him: He's the boyfriend.

Me: What the fuck!....

I started to fume in anger.

Me: Fine..leave it...I'll sort it out myself.

I dropped the call.

Rico?...What the fuck is Rico doing with my brother's wife?

He knows the rules!..This is not good, not good at all.

~

~

[Venus]

I decided to move in with Tyson, I was constantly in his house anyways so it made sense.

We've spent so much time together and we got to know each other more.

Though I was exposed to all his dealings and who he was, I was not scared of him, in fact it made me love him more, crazy I know.

We haven't been intimate though, I was still struggling to get what Max did out of my mind. I still had sessions with Mr Nzama and they were helping but I felt like they were taking time to help me completely forget.

I had just finished bathing, I was getting ready for bed.

Tyson was sitting on the bed with his laptop getting some work done.

I went inside covers and kissed him on his cheek.

Me: Thank you for the flowers, they are beautiful.

Him: Just like you.

He said that focused on his laptop.

Me: I didn't know you knew anything about flowers.

Him: I would like to take all the credit but Sandy helped me pick them.

Me: Sandy?.

He closed his laptop and gave me his attention.

Him: There's nothing going on between me and Sandy.

He pecked my lower lip.

Me: I don't like her.....but.

I looked at him.

Me: I trust you.

I really don't like her but I'll have c

to trust my man and besides Sandy has nothing on me, not that I'm gloating but I have the full package.

Him: oh jea.

He kissed me.

I moved and sat on top of him.

The kiss tensed up, He was grabbing my butt.

He started running his hands on my thighs. I had my hands cupping his face, I could feel him get hard.

I suddenly heard the screams I made when Max was raping me and I jumped off him and sat on the side.

Me: I'm sorry.

I pushed my hair to the back and laid down with my back facing him, He touched my shoulders.

Him: It's okey.

Me: This is not fair...I spent half my life being subjected to sex by force and now that I want to do it out of pleasure I can't.

I had tears.



Him: Don't be too hard on yourself.

I didn't respond.

He cuddled me with my back still facing him.

Him: Minnie and Mama D are coming tomorrow.

Me: Mhh.

I know he changed the topic to make me feel better.

Me: I can't wait, she's such a soul.

Him: Minnie or Mama D?

I playfully hit him with my elbow and he chuckled.

Him: What?.

Me: You know I mean Minnie.

Him: ouch!, my mom will have to know about this.

Me: Come on, you know I love your mom.

Him: I'm joking Rato....well you'll have to talk to

your pumpkin, she don't want to go to school?.

Me: why is she going to school anyways, she's five?

Him: and she speaks like a ten year old.

We both laughed.

Me: You better get used to those talks because she's here to stay.

Him: oh God talk me.

Me: Come on, she's not that bad.

Him: maybe to you "Candy"

We both laughed.

Mama D and Minnie will be staying with us, Tyson thought it would be a great idea to have them around and I couldn't agree more.. this house is so huge and can get so quiet.

After our talk about Minnie the princess we finally drifted to sleep.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:

Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*17\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I can never begin to explain the feeling of waking up in Tyson's arms...it's just priceless.

For a moment I felt like not waking up at all, just stay inside the covers with my handsome chocolate but hey we both got to work.

I woke up first and went for my morning bath, by the time I returned to the bedroom he was already awake...looking at me.

Me:Good morning.

I went and kissed him and he held on to my body I ended up falling on top of him.

Me: Hey, I need to get dressed.

I stood up, fixed my towel and lotioned my body.

Him: Need some help?.

I chuckled.

Me: No, and you need to get ready before you run late.

Him: Perks of being a partner!!.

He said that with a smirk on his face.

I ignored him and eventually he went to take his shower while I got dressed.

After I finished up, I went to make us breakfast in the kitchen and within a few minutes he walked in.

Damn! my man looks good, and that suit!...it's like it was made for him...showing off all the hunkiness of his body...Lord take me now.

Me: I made break fast.

He came and held my waist.

Me: You smell good.

He chuckled.

Him: Thank you baby, you look beautiful.

I flashed a smile.

Me: What time will Mama D and Minnie get here?.

I said that while getting off his arms.

Him: I'm not sure, why?.

I sipped my coffee as he dug in his breakfast.

Me: My shift ends a bit late and I was hoping I get home before them, maybe cook dinner.

He focused on his meal.

Me: Can you find out for me?.

He nodded.

We continued eating breakfast and both went to work with our separate cars.

Amanda: someone is glowing!.

Me: oh really...Who?.

I said that sarcastically while looking around,

We both laughed.

Her: It's nice seeing you so happy.

Me: it's nice being happy.

Her: mhh so?.

Me: What?.

Her: Tell me about it, what got you so hapoy?.

We both stopped walking.

Me: I don't kiss and tell.

Her: savage.

I laughed and walked inside my office and  
Amanda walked to her office.

I got through my work though it was kind of  
hard with Tyson constantly on my mind.

I finally decided to do a little drive by his office  
during lunch time.

I got there and walked to the receptionist.

Me: Hi is Mr Khumalo busy?.

Voice: No he just got out of a meeting.

The voice sounded so familiar, I turned and found Sandy standing behind me.

I looked at her then the receptionist.

Her: Hi Venus.

Me: Hi.

It was so awkward, I mean she could've just let the receptionist be the one who tells me that.

Her: I can walk you to his office!.

Me: No that won't be necessary but thank you.

I walked to his office and when I got there I decided to knock.

Last thing I want is walking in on another disaster.

Him: come in.

I walked in and his eyes were fixed on the laptop in front of him.

Me: Did I come at the wrong time?.

Him: Baby.

He stood up, kissed my cheek and walked over to close the door while I made my way to his chair.

Me: This is comfy.

He chuckled.

Me: I thought I should bring you lunch.

Him: thank you, are you sure that's the only reason you're here....not missing me?.

Me: okey well and a little of that too.

We both smiled and He wrapped his hands around my waist as I stood up.

Him: I missed you too.

He kissed me and then some guy barged in disturbing our moment.

Him: ta Rico.



We both looked at him and then Sandy walked in shortly after him.

Her: I tried to stop him.

Him: It's okey Sandy you can go.

Sandy walked out leaving the guy behind.

Him: Sbuh...

Sbuh: Sho ta Rico....Hi Venus!.

He knows my name?...

Me: Hi.....Baby I'll see you at home.

I could tell they had a lot to discuss so I decided to excuse my self. I kissed Tyson on the cheek and I walked out.

On my way I bumped into Sandy again.

Oh only if this girl new how much I don't like her she'd keep her distance.

Her: Venus!.

She shouted my name as she ran after me, I

stopped and looked at her.

Me: Hey...what's your name again?.

Of course I knew her name but me knowing her name will make her feel kind of special so why not ruin her mood?

Her: emm I'm Sandy!.

Me: Oh Sandy...nice name.

Her: Thank you.

Me: Listen I have to go now sweetie, I have patients waiting for me.

I hugged her and walked out.

~

~

[Tyson]

It's been a long time since I last saw Sbuh, way before I met Venus so I don't know how he knows her name and that tells me one thing, He's been checking on me. But why?.

Him: ta Rico.

Me: you have something to tell me?.

Him: sho ta Rico.

Me: okey I'm listening.

Him: Sizwe is back.

I quickly turned and looked at him.

Sbuh seems to know a lot...who told him I was after Sizwe?.

Me: How did you know I was after him?.

Him: you are after him?.

I grabbed his shirt and pinned him against the wall.

Me: Who sent you?

Him: No one I swear.

His eyes reflected fear and I wanted to believe him but he knew way too much, things he was not suppose to know.

Me: Explain yourself!.

Him: Sizwe called a few weeks back and asked me to look for his brother and when I couldn't find him he asked about his wives and...

Me: And?.

Him: I told him where they are.

He said that shyly.

I let go of him and he fixed his shirt.

Me: Where is he now?

Him: PMB, he got here in the morning yersteday.

Me: That's all?

He nodded.

Me: You can go now.

He walked out.

Me: Sbuh....sorry about your torn shirt.

Him: no smoko ta.

He walked out, Sbuh has always been loyal to

me, I know he'll never cross me. I guess I lost it when I realise he knew more than he should..

I don't know what Sizwe is playing at but whatever it is I got to win it.

I called Skhumbuzo and within 30 minutes he was here.

Me: We have a situation.

Him: Sizwe's back.

Me: You knew about this?

Him: My connection in Nonyane Air-ways just informed me, apparently He landed yesterday.

Me: He's said to be in PMB

Him: I'll call Zach.

Me: do that, it's about time I deal with him.

~

~

[Venus]

I got off work around four, Tyson said he'll only fetch his mom tonight so It will give me sometime to prepare.

I got home and found Tyson's car in the drive in. I had no choice but to park there too because he's was in a way.

I heard voices from inside the house, it was Minnie and Tyson arguing about something.

Me: Pumpkin!.

She ran towards me and I picked her up and gave her a baby kiss.

She cupped my face.

Her: Candy.

She was giggling.

Minnie is so bubbly.

I put her down and went to Tyson.

Me: I'll kill you.

I said that whispering and he just chuckled.

Minnie: Candy.

Me: Yes Pumpkin.

I picked her up and made her sit on the counter.

Her: I don't like my new school.

Him: oh not again.

Me: Why?

Her: They make us eat and sleep and if you don't want to sleep they say they will make the dogs eat us.

I smiled.

Me: They won't do that pumpkin, they are just joking.

Her: I don't want to go there tomorrow.

Me: But Pumpkin you have to go to school so you can learn.

Her: You and Daddy can teach me.

Tyson Chuckled.

Him: you are going to school.

Her: Candy.

Now I was stuck between her and her father.

Me: Where's Mama D?.

I knew that if I don't change the topic things will get hot.

Him: She has a headache, she's in her bedroom.

Me: I'll go greet her.

I took my tablets and glass of water with.

Me: Mama.

Her: oh it's the girl who is a friend.

I smiled.

I forgot how funny she can be.

Me: I heard you're not feeling well, I brought you these.

Her: thank you baby.....how are you?.

Me: I'm good Mah.



She smiled.

Her: how is your friend treating you?.

Me: Tyson is treating me like a queen.

Her: That's my boy.

I chuckled.

Me: Mah try get some sleep, I'll go prepare dinner.

Her: Owk sweety.

I prepared dinner with Minnie helping me, or setting me back rather. Tyson said he'll go get some drinks but he's been gone for more than two hour.

I orginised the table and called Tyson, he can't just walk out on me.

Him: Rato I'm on my way.

Me: You've been gone for hours.

Him: I'm coming.

He dropped the call.

I tell you now I got extreme when he dropped on me but I calm down when I heard his car driving in.

Me: Pumpkin, tell granny that dinner is ready.

She ran to her room while Tyson walked in.

To my surprise he was with Amanda and Lwazi.

Me: Hey chomie.

I hugged her.

Me: I didn't know you're coming.

Her: Well Surprise then.

We both laughed.

Mama D walked in.

Her: yey what are yoi doing here, where is your husband?.

I laughed.

Amanda: Oh Hi Mah I missed you too.

They hugged and Mama D took Lwazi from Tyson.

Her: how is granny's little boy?.

Minnie: Can I hold him?.

Amanda: Nooo.

Minnie: Why?.

Me: Because you young pumpkin, here eat your food.

She sat down.

Me: I'll get more plates.

Tyson: Unfortunately I can't eat with you....I'm rushing somewhere.

MamaD: at this time of the night?.

Him: yes, I have to get to KZN...I'm dealing with a tough client.

I looked at Amanda.

MamaD: tjo ai you and your clients...

Him: Jea Mah, I'll go get ready.

He walked to our room and after a while I followed him.

I heard the shower water running and I figured he was taking a shower.

I walked inside his closet and got His police boots, shirt, formal pants and a coat.

After a while he got out.

Him: Rato, I thought you're having dinner with family.

He said that while drying his body.

Me: I thought I should come and help you.

Him: Thank you baby.

He lotioned himself.

Me: Tyson.

Him: Baby.

Me: There's no client right?.

He kept quiet.

Me: are we in danger?.

Him: No....no you're not baby....It's just someone I need to take care of.

Me: Where?.

Him: Down in KZN.

Me: Okey.

I walked inside the closet and got out with his bullet proof vest.

He chuckled.

Him: I don't think I'll need that.

Me: You don't know that.

Him: I do.

He took it and made me wear it.

Him: You look good.

I laughed.

Me: Can you at least eat before you go.

Him: Rato I don't have time, Skhumbuzo will be here in a minute.

Me: Well he'll just have to join you.

He looked at me.

Me: Please,

He smiled.

Him: Owk.

Me: I'll go dish up.

I kissed him and he helped me get out of the vest and I went to dish up so him and Skhunbuzo who was already there.

MamaD: hau you are also going with Bongani, ai this client of his must be a real hot head.

SK: client?

Amanda: Yes baby

She signaled him.

Me: Yes, Tyson told me the client mistakenly

shot someone so they might need a doctor  
that's why he's going with him.

I looked at Tyson and he smiled.

Him: We have to go.

Me: I'll walk you out.

SK kissed the sleeping Lwazi and Amanda.

By the way Amanda responded to the kiss I  
could tell they were not on good terms.

Tyson and I walked out to his car.

He wrapped his arms around my waist and  
kissed me.

SK: get a room.

Tyson: Why? we have a full house.

We both laughed.

Him: I have to go baby, I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I stepped back and watched them drive off.

I shouted.

Me: Be safe!

He beeped the hooter.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*18\*\*\*\*\*

[Skhumbuzo]

We woke up in the morning and the weather was not bad here in KZN, just a little windy but nothing hectic.

We had to take a 1h30 drive from Brettenwood Coastal Estate where Tyson's house was to PMB. We decided we'd get lunch along the way since neither of us was prepared to cook in the morning.

Me: I think we should pull over and have



breakfast first before we get to his hotel.

He didn't even hear me , he was just staring outside the window.

Me: Tyson

Him: mhh, Sorry bruh I just have a lot on my mind.

Me: I can see that.

Him: Do you think I made a mistake by killing Max?.

Me: Tyson listen, it's a bit too late to have second thoughts now...weather you made a mistake or not, you can never unkill him.

Him: But what if....

Me: No, get that out of your mind.

He just kept quiet, I could see he was battling with his thoughts.

Him: You're probably right.

Me: I know I am, now I'm pulling over I'm hungry.

I pulled over to a local restaurant and we sat down for breakfast, nothing fancy just a sandwich and coffee meal.

It was just as we were leaving when Tyson spotted Sizwe having breakfast with some call girl. He didn't utter any words..he just marched to where they were sitting and I followed him.

Him: Lady please excuse us.

The girl just looked at us and remained seated.

Sizwe: Ohh it's the famous Rico and S'Lock themselves in flash, right in front of me.

I badly wanted to wipe the smirk off his face.

Tyson looked at him, it's more like he was trying to read his mind.

Me: We meet again.

Sizwe: oh and I've missed you so much.

He laughed after saying that.

Him: Okey fun time is over now, sweetie , take a

cab...I'll meet you in my hotel room.

He took a few hundreds and gave them to the girl.

Him: Okey gentlemen how can I help you?.

Tyson was losing it every second, but he managed to maintain a calm state.

Me: I heard you brother became a magician, He's cabable of disappearing now.

I only said that to piss him off since we couldn't kill him in public but it looked like I had to do more than that.

Him: Max is old he can take care of himself.

Tyson: really? because last time I saw him he was begging for his life.

Him: That's why you decided to go after his left over?..or should I say our left overs.

He chuckled and both me and Tyson remained silent.

Me: What lies can you possibly come with?

Him: Oh she didn't tell you?...don't you know that good brothers share...and Max is a very good brother.

Me: Was.

The smirk on his face vanished.

Tyson and I chuckled.

Him: if he's dead of which I know he's not I'd know.....right now it's just you trying to mess with my mind and you're failing.

Tyson: You think so?...so how would I know that you're the one that killed my wife? huh?.

Reality Kicked in to Sizwe that Max is really dead, I mean we all know that people only reveal secrets when they are dying.

We stood up and attempted to leave.

Him: Well!

We turned and looked at him.

Him: in that case you should call your girlfriend and say your goodbyes, she's joining her dear husband on the other side.

Tyson lost it, he reached for his gun but I managed to stop him.

Me: He's buffing.

Sizwe stood up laughing.

Tyson moved to him and I blogged him.

Me: Not here.

Sizwe walked out leaving me with Tyson who was pacing up and down , attracting unnecessary attention.

Me: If something happened Zach would've called us by now.

Him: She's not picking up.

He dropped the call and tried calling her again.

Me: I'll call Amanda.

I tried calling her but she was also not picking

up and I started to panic.

Me: Try Mama D.

Him: Straight to voicemail, we need to get back.

As much as I wanted us to stay and finish Sizwe off, I couldn't risk my family in the process, if something bad happened to them I wouldn't be able to forgive myself.

I took the car keys and drove. Tyson was making a call.

Him: Damn it Zach!, he's also not picking up.

We drove back to the house, I literally raced there because within 45 minutes we were there, I couldn't care less about stop signs and red lights.

Him: We need a Jet otherwise we won't make it in time.

Me: None of my contacts are picking up.

Him: This can't be good, damn it!

He banged the door.

I was just as worried, and with no one reachable on that side was not helping.

~

~

[Venus]

It was just after two o'clock in the afternoon Amanda and I decided to go out after work, just relax our minds before we go back home.

Me: Oh wow!.

We stopped at some jewellery shop and admired the beauty.

Me: This necklace is to die for.

Her: And it would look good on you, it compliments your skin colour.

Me: Oh and this one too, I like the little diamond on the centre.

Her: ahh ai it's too expensive.

We both laughed and exited the shop.

Her: Window shopping, I feel like a teenage girl.

We laughed even more and people looked at us.

Her: Shii don't look here comes Sandy.

Me: where?

I whispered and she whispered back.

Her: Behind you.

I slowly turned and flashed a huge fake smile as my eyes met her.

Me: Sandra hi.

Amanda looked at me and silently giggled.

Sandy: It's Sandy.

Me: Oh forgive me my bad I'm not good with names.

Amanda just burst into laughter and I kept a straight face.

Her: It's okey, Tyson wants to talk to you.



She gave me her phone and she had already dialled his number.

Him: Talk to me.

Me: Baby?.

Him: Rato, why don't you pick up your phone?.

I took my phone out and seached for his missed calls but there were none.

Me: I didn't receive any calls from you.

I heard Skhumbuzo talking in the background.

SK: Are they okey? where's Amanda?.

Tyson: are you home?

Me: No, I'm at the mall with Amanda.

Him: Give her the phone.

I passed it to her and they talked, By the look of things Skhumbuzo and Amanda were fighting.

She dropped the phone after saying OK and gave it to Sandy.

Her: Let's go.

Sandy: I'll leave you to it.

Her: Bye.

She said that with an attitude and I playfully hit her hand.

Her: ouch!

We both giggled.

Me: Don't be mean to Sandra I like her.

We laughed as we approach our car.

Her: Sandra? you're mean.

Me: No I'm not.

Her: What's your story with her?

Me: I just don't like her.

Her: and the name?

Me: Just pulling her leg, I enjoy busting her bubble.

Her: who would have thought, The saint is not

so saintly after all.

Me: Whatever!

I gave her the hand.

We got home I decided to cook, Tyson said he's on his way and he didn't sound good, I didn't want to pry so I let him be..he'll tell me when he's ready, that's if I have to know anyways.

~

~

[Tyson]

We decided to meet with the crew before we go home. We were at the warehouse and some members couldn't make it because the meeting was a short notice.

DK: My guy went to the hotel he was in but he had already checked out.

DK is a new member and he's trying by all means to impress us, he works extra hard to

prove his capability, and I must say..I like his energy but right now I have no time, I have to find Sizwe who just disappeared without a trace.

Zach: Got it!

We all looked at him.

Zach: This whole thing was planned, the minute you got inside the location he tampered with your cell phones that's why you couldn't reach us.

Me: bloody Busted.

Zach: Your cell phone recorded the calls you made unavailable for some period but it eventually worked normal after some time.

I clicked my tongue.

Zach: and he monitored your every move, it's not that you were at the right place at the right time.

Me: What's that suppose to mean?

SK: We didn't find him, he found us....he was following us.

DK: okey sharp.

He was on the phone, he dropped it and looked at us.

DK: He's on his flight back to Congo.

SK: Fuck!.

He pushed the table.

Me: He's time is coming....slowly but surely.

While we were talking I received a massage.

=====Not so clever after all, Better keep a close eye to your family, especially that gorgeous lady of ours...we can never know when she decided to be a magician herself # wink=====

Zach: What?

Me: He just sent me a massage.

Zach: I'll try trace it.

I tossed him my phone.

Me: DK, can we talk...privately, I need you to organise something for me.

SK: okey guys we'll keep in touch.

We went our separate ways.

~

~

[Venus]

Amanda was singing to Lwazi as she was rocking him back and forth, trying to make him stop crying.

Me: You have a beautiful voice.

She smiled.

Her: Thank you, I got that from Mama D.

Minnie: Candy...I'm full.

Me: okey pumpkin, give me your dish so we can go get you bathed.

She gave me her dish which had almost untouched food, I bathed her and put her to bed, I don't know whether it's because she's missing her dad but Minnie was down and I don't know why Tyson hasn't got home yet, he said he's on his way a long time.

Me: Finally asleep?

Her: Yep, I'm a little tired too so I'll just go to bed.

Before she could walk to her room Tyson and Skhumbuzo walked in.

Amanda ran to Skhumbuzo and hugged him.

Him: Go get the bags baby so we can go home.

She rushed, For someone who was promising to kill him earlie on she sure acted otherwise, I guess when love got you, it got you.

She came back and gave Lwazi to Skhumbuzo.

Me: aren't you going to eat first?

Amanda: He'll eat at home.

Me: I'm not talking to you, Skhumbuzo?

Him: Oh ho.

Tyson chuckled and sat on the couch. He looked so tired.

Me: okay then farewell.

They bid goodbye and left.

Me: I'll warm your food up.

Him: No I'm fine, I'll eat tomorrow.

I looked at him and warmed it anyways, he can't sleep with an empty stomach.

Me: Eat, I'll be in the bathroom.

I walked out leaving him smiling on his own.

I went and took my night bath and just as I walked out, I found Tyson standing in the bedroom.

Something seemed to bother him, he was not



my Tyson.

Him: Rato can I ask you something?

Me: Yes baby.

I wrapped a towel around my body and sat next to him.

Him: listen, there's no easier way to ask this so I'm just going to ask.

Me: Okey.

I nodded in hesitation.

Him: Have you ever slept with Sizwe?

Me: Sizwe who baby?...if that's not Max's name then no.

He sighed in relieve.

Him: Come here.

He made me sit on his lap.

Him: I love you.

Me: I love you more.

As much as I wanted ask him more about his question my desire for him got in the way, I missed being in his presence.

He grabbed my thighs and kissed me, Within a moment our tongues are dancing in a rhythm.

I started softly moaning and he carried me and nicely placed me on the bed.

He parted my legs and got in between them, Things heated up and I could feel his boner.

it's like he knew exactly where I needed his touch, He unwrapped my towel and played with my nipples, his hand made a trip all the way down to my honey pot.

Lord, I wanted him inside me already. His finger played around my clit and I was gasping for air, after a while of teasing me I was dripping wet and he put his index finger through.

Me: ahh.

Him: are you okay?

Me: don't stop.

He undressed himself and I could feel the warmth as our body touched.

He slowly made his way in and he was so huge I loudly breath.

He started by moving slowly and I tightly grabbed the shirts as I felt pain but as soon as he was all in the pain seized.

I closed my eyes enjoying every moment as I felt every inch of him inside me.

Me: Mhh.

He stopped and I opened my eyes, looking right in his eyes.

He balanced with his elbow next to my head, one tear feel from his eye and we put his hand on his face.

Me: what now?

I didn't mean to say that, I guess pleasure had

me eating out of it hand.

Him: Venus I love you.

I removed his hand from his eyes and he looked at me.

Me: deeper please.

And that's where he pumped me hard like he was punishing me for asking him. After a while he came and by that time I had already come like two times.

He got off me and I put my head in his chest as we were both trying to catch our breath.

Me: I love you too Bongani.

He chuckled.

After our silly pillow talk we both dozed off to lala land.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*19\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I opened my eyes in the morning and Tyson was not next to me, I checked the time and I realized that if I don't get up now Minnie will be late for school.

I woke up, brushed my teeth and washed myself. Though my shift start later today I still have to prepare for Minnie.

I walked into her room and she was still sleeping.

Me: Pumpkin!.

She was fast asleep. I hate it when I have to wake her up for school, especially since it's winter...it's ice cold in the morning.

I decided to prepare her breakfast and other things before I bath her.

I walked to the kitchen and found Tyson drinking water from a bottle, by the way he's sweating I could tell he's from the gym.

I leaned against the wall and folded my arms, stared at him admiring God's creation.

He turned after a while and our eyes met.

Him: Good morning.

He flashed a smile.

Me: For a moment there I thought it was a hit and run.

He chuckled and I smiled.

He walked closer and Kissed me, he pulled out just as I was getting in the mood, he left me begging for more with my eyes still closed as I was struggling to open them.

Him: You looked so peaceful I didn't want to wake you up.

Me: I was just joking.

He pecked my lip.

Him: I know.

He held my waist so tight and brought me closer to him.

I slowly breath out, trust me to get turned on just like that.

Him: you're...

He raised his eyebrow with a semi-smile.

Me: what?

He smiled.

Him: nothing I'll go take a shower.

He let go of me.

Me: now!?

He chuckled shaking his head and walked out leaving me like that.

I went over the kitchen and made Minnie's lunch box.

I walked closer to the coffee machine and saw a note attached to it.

===Best Night of my life===

I put it in my chest and smiled on my own.

MamaD: good morning friend.

I turned and greeted back with a huge smile.

Me: it is a good morning indeed.

Her: someone got it all last night.

I chuckled, Mama D is one naughty, crazy woman..in a good way though but still I can never discuss my sexual life with her, never!...I mean she's an elder so it doesn't feel right.

Me: I'll go wake Minnie up.

Her: Good luck with that.

I smiled and walked to Minnie's room.

Me: Pumpkin.

I softly shock her.



Her: Mhh.

She was sleepy.

Me: Wake up baby you have to get ready for school.

Her: Candy!

She looked at me with puppy eyes.

Me: yes baby!

Her: I don't want to go to school.

Me: Why?

Her: I don't feel good.

She coughed, you know those dry coughs? yep, I could tell she was really sick. On any other day I'd say she was just tricking me but her temperature was high, she was coming down with flue.

Me: Pumpkin you're burning, were you playing outside in the cold?

Her: No, I only went outside the time I was

waiting for granny to pick me up.

Me: Why didn't you wait inside?

Her: My Miss was gone and she locks the class.

Me: and leave you on your own outside?

She nodded.

Me: Owk baby get back to sleep, I'll bring another blanket.

She pulled the blanket and I kissed her forehead and walked out.

I need to pay this teacher of hers a visit, who leaves a five-year old on it's own, especially out in a cold.

I was having coffee with Mama D when we heard a knock.

Me: I'll get it.

I opened the door.

Guy: Morning.

Me: Morning.

Him: I'm here to see Tyson.

Me: I'll call him.

I opened the door wider making space for him to enter.

He walked in a greeted Mama D.

I called Tyson and he walked in after me.

Him: DK.

DK: ta R...emm I brought these.

he handed Tyson his car keys.

Him: I knew you could pull it off.

They fist bumped.

MamaD: excuse me.

She walked to her room.

DK: I should also get going.

Him: Okey, thanks again.

DK: don't sweat it.....ohh Zach said the guys will be here anytime from now on.

He nodded and DK walked out.

Tyson looked at me with a smile.

Me: and?

Him: come, let me show you something.

He pulled my hand and we walked outside.

Me: ahh Tyson it's cold out here.

Him: look.

He pointed on a car not to far from us.

Me: okey, same model and same colour...what's your excuse this time?

He smiled.

Him: it's yours.

I looked at him and realized he wasn't joking.

Me: Really?

I asked jumping in joy.

Him: like it?

Me: are you kiddng me? it's a SUV I looove it.....thank you baby.

I was talking so bubbly and fast.

I kissed him and went inside to explore my new ride.

Me: Thank you baby I love it, Lord....my car.

Tyson couldn't say much and not that I gave him a chance, I was so excited.

~

~

[Sizwe]

The Crips and my gang always had bad blood but especially SK and I, if it wasn't for Tyson he would have put a bullet on my head. Now that Max told them the truth I know I will be number one target that's why I have to act fast, attack before them...I don't have to physically be in the

country to turn their lives upside down I have people who can do it for me and the Crips have an easy code, Family and that is exactly where I will strike.

Antonio: If you don't stop you'll drown yourself in that alcohol.

He said that with a Russian accent.

Me: Why not? I have Money I can afford it.

I was a little drunk, this whole Max thing was taking a stroll on me.

He's the only person who had my back, if they really killed him which now I believe they did because he can't be missing for such a long time, I have to avenge his death.

Me: Excuse me I have to make a call.

Him: go ahead.

I went outside and took my phone out, Rico just started war.

~

~

[Venus]

Eventually having a new car sank in so I was less all over the place but I still couldn't believe it was mine.

Tyson: Rato.

I turned and looked at him, damn he looked good in his formal clothes, what am I saying? my man looks good in anything, he'd wear an overall and still look a million.

Me: are going to court?

He nodded and I smiled, I could tell he was not in the mood for court.

Him: what time is your shift?

Me: Oh about that, I spoke to Amanda I'm not going to work today.

He looked at me.

Me: Minnie has flue I told her to go back go bed,  
I can't leave her by herself since Mama D is  
going to a prayer session.

Him: Mhh

He kissed my cheek.

Him: let me go check my princess before I go to  
work.

Me: okey.

He walked to her room.

~

~

[Tyson]

Me: Honey.

She raised her head and looked at me.

My girl was really sick, she wasn't her normal  
bubbly self.

Her: Daddy.



She coughed.

Me: Candy tells me that you're sick.

She nodded.

Me: I'll tell her to bring you a syrup to drink so you can get better okey?

Her: okey daddy.

Me: Have you eaten?

Her: I ate a soft porridge, Candy said it's good because it contains ingredients that will help me get better.

I laughed because she was starting to sound more like her normal self.

Me: okey baby..I'll see you when I get back from work.

She stood up in the bed, kissed my cheek and quickly got inside covers.

Me: Bye daddy.

She giggled and I chuckled.

I walked out and found Venus reading a magazine in the lounge.

Me: Even Flue can't get her down.

We both laughed.

Her: But she's not herself and I have no one but her teacher to blame.

Me: Her teacher?

Her: Yes she locked her outside the time she was waiting for Mama D to fetch her.

Me: What!?

Her: yep, but don't worry about it I've already called her and gave her a peace of my mind.

Me: Thank you baby, I don't know what I'd do without you.

Her: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I stood up.

Me: I need to rush, don't forget the guys are coming to install the monitors.

Her: okey, have a nice day.

Me: Thank you Rato.

I walked out after kissing her goodbye.

~

[Venus]

When Tyson said there are people coming I thought he meant four or five people but there are more than ten people in here and I don't know what they are doing because the other guy literally knocked down the wall next to our bedroom, I know they are not extending it because it's already huge. All I did was to make sure I'm not on their way, I felt sorry for Minnie, she couldn't sleep with all the noise but after eating her lunch I gave her panado and she dozed off.

Guy: sorry ma'am, We need a key to the other

room.

He pointed at it.

Me: that's Tyson's study.

Him: we need to install camaras.

Me: Did he say something about it?, his study?

Him: No but Zach gave us instructions to monitor every room.

Me: every room? even the bathrooms?

He nodded.

What? Noo, where is privacy in that?

Me: emm listen Let me call Tyson first then I'll get back to you.

Before I called dial his number I received a call from an unknown number.

Me: Dr Johnson hello?

Voice: Yeywena Venus.

I quickly removed the phone from my ear, my

heart sank to the bottom of my stomach. I felt tears ready to fall.

Voice: are you still there? Venus.

I hit the red button and dropped the call.

[08/29, 06:43] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*20\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

After my meeting Sandy told me that Venus called so I tried calling her back but it took me straight to voicemail, I called the landline and no one answered. I freaked out because I know Venus is always next to her phone unless she's at work but in this case she's not at work so I don't know why her phone would be switched off.

Me: Sandy, did she say why she was calling?

Her: Not really she just asked for you and I told her you were in a meeting and she dropped the call.

Me: mhh.

I stood up and wore my jacket.

Her: is everything owk?

Me: I hope so, listen I need you to cancel my meeting with Stupner, I need to get home.

Her: okey, anything else?

Me: That's all for now.

I walked out and drove straight home.

I expected to hear the machine sounds all the way from the gate but it was quiet, even inside the house.

Me: Venus!

I shouted all the way to our bedroom but she wasn't there, I went back to the dining.

Me: Rato!

MamaD appeared from her bedroom.

Her: ai umsindo Bongani.

Me: Mah, where's Venus!?.

Her: She's sleeping in Minnie's bedroom.

I let out a sigh of relieve.

Her: what is going on Bongani?.

Me: what's going on with what mah?.

Her: I found Venus sitting on the floor in tears when I got here, I had to tell those men to leave!.

Me: crying?..why was she crying?.

Her: Bongani would I be asking you if I know?.

She kept a straight face, I could tell she was angry but I don't know why because just like her I don't know what's wrong with Rato.

Me: wooo! Mah, you think I hurt her?

Her: did you?

Me: of course not!, Venus was okey when I left for work.

Her: mhh.

I shock my head in disbelief.

Me: I'll go check on her.

Her: No, let her have her rest.

Me: Ai Mama D.

Mama D has grown fond of Venus, she was way overprotective of her.

She gave me a dead stare.

Me: Fine!

Since I couldn't talk to Venus I decided to go finish my work in the study. I'm worried though, what could possible be wrong with Rato?, I just pray it's nothing serious. I got inside my study, it looked more like when I left it this morning...nothing was changed.



My eyes were fixed on the computer when Venus came in holding a tray with food being followed by Minnie who had a doll wrapped with a small blanket in her arms.

I shifted my attention to them, Mama D was right...something was bothering Venus I could see through the fake smiles she threw at me.

Her: I didn't know you were back.

Me: and yet you bring food to my study you must be a Songoma.

I only said that to make her feel better, She laughed.

Me: Thank you baby.

I stood up and kissed her.

Minnie: Should I close my eyes?

We looked at her and she had already covered her eyes with both her hands, busy giggling.

We both laughed.

Me: come here princess.

I picked her up and made her sit on my chair.

Me: Do you want to watch Princess Sofia?

She nodded in excitement.

I saved my work files and brought the PC close to her.

Me: okey You go here and type "Princes....".

Her: Daddy I know.

She pushed my hand and started typing, I let out a sigh with Venus laughing at me.

Me: tjo ai, come!.

I pulled Rato's hand and we walked out towards the balcony.

Her: Tyson, No!

Me: come on Venus, nothing will happen to you.

Her: Yes nothing will happen other than my heart literally stopping with my eyes open and

I'll die looking a statue.

She said that very fast without stopping in between her sentences, even her facial expression was so funny I couldn't help but laugh.

She attempted walking back inside but I blocked her way.

I put my arms around her waist and tightly grabbed her.

Me: do you trust me?.

She nodded but she was still scared.

We kept on moving in circles until she loosen up.

Me: Rato?.

Her: mhh!.

Me: Did something happen while I was at work?

Her: Why do you ask?

Me: Sandy said you called.

Her: The guys wanted access to your study.

Me: That's all?

She kept quiet , instead she burried her face in my chest and tightly locked her hands around my neck.

Me: Rato!....Baby, Mama D is worried about you and so am I.....Rato.

She sniffed.

Me: it's okey.

I brushed her back until she was calm.

Me: come, let me show you how the new security system work.

We walked out to the kitchen.

Me: the password is Minnie, M-i-n-n-i-e.

She nodded.

Me: and here, under this counter we have a panic button, it similar to the one by the door.

Her: Tyson!.

Me: Rato.

Her: can we not have cameras in our bed room.

I smiled.

Her: it's creepy.

Me: there won't be cameras in our bedroom.

She smiled.

Her: ohh and the bathrooms please.

I nodded and flashed a smile.

Me: I need to make a phone call.

I kissed her forehead and walked out. If Venus won't tell me what's going on, I have no choice but to find it out myself.

Me: Candice, I've been trying to get hold of Zach but his phone is off.

Her: Oh wait!

I heard her shouting in the background.

Her: Baby!...Tyson is on the line, he wants to talk to you.

I waited a while and Zach picked the phone.

Him: My man.

Me: Man! I need your help.

Him: shoot!

~

~

[Venus]

I wanted to talk to Tyson and explain everything to him but I can't do that because I'm not even sure why Pat was calling me. We haven't spoken in a while actually in years, why now?. I might not know what she wants but one thing I know is where ever Pat is concerned there is never peace.

After Tyson left Mama D walked in.

Her: friend!.

I smiled and turned to look at her.

Me: Mama D!

Her: You look better!

Me: I do.

Her: what's wrong baby?

I looked at her then looked down.

Her: okey you don't have to tell me but if you need something don't hesitate asking me okey?

I nodded.

Her: even if Bongani is giving you a hard time just tell me and I'll sort him out!.

She balled her fist and I laughed because it was funny.

Her: on a serious note Rato wakhe, if you need something just say the word.

Me: Thank you Mama D

Her: and even when I've left, I'm only a phone

call away.

Me: left?...you won't be staying with us anymore?

She squizzed my cheeks.

Her: Don't do that....the puppy eyes?...Minnie  
trys that all the time it's don't work with me.

I laughed.

Me: But MamaD?

Her: Hey I need to go, my sister needs me, she  
have no one back in KZN so I have to be there  
for her.

Me: Mama D.

Her: Like I said I'm only a phone call away.

I nodded.

Her: good!, now I'll have black tea with two  
sugers.

She looked at me and I laughed.

I went to plug the kettle and got the cup.



Mama D sat in front of the TV watching some talent show. My phone rang and I looked at the caller Id.

Me: why won't you leave me alone?.

I said to myself.

I looked at Mama D and her eyes were fixed on the Tv, I sneaked to the ensuite bathroom and answered.

Her: Where the hell are you?

I was not interested in what she had to say all I wanted was to tell her to leave me the hell alone.

Me: I don't know why you called and quite frankly I don't care ...just leave me alone.

I dropped the call and put it on reject list. I turned around and found Tyson standing by the door with his arms folded.

Me: Emm Tys..Baby.

[08/29, 08:47] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:

Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*21\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Tyson looked at me like he was waiting for an explanation. What do I say now? because by the look of things he's been standing here for sometime and he heard everything I said.

Me: Tyson.

Him: Venus.

He was not happy at all, Tyson don't usually call me by my name.

I walked out to the bedroom with him following me. He unfolded his arms and looked at me, it's like he could see right through my soul.

Him: Venus what's wrong ?

Me: Tyson really it's n..

Him: Don't tell me it's nothing Venus!, I know something is going on, what is it?.

He was shouting and at that instant I didn't know what to say so I remained silent.

Him: What's going on Venus?.

I looked at him then down.

It's crazy that such a small thing grew to have such huge effect.... I mean I know I didn't do anything wrong and I wanted to tell him but I didn't know how to approach him and now he's angry which makes it even more difficult.

Him: You won't tell me now will you?

His voice was now calm.

He exited the bedroom before I could answer.

My phone rang again...it was a different number but still Unknown and I knew it was Pat, it had to be her. I don't know why this woman won't leave me alone.

I answered , taking all the anger accompanied by tears I had kept the time Tyson was here I didn't even give her a chance to speak.

Me: It's not enough that you ruined my life the minute I laid my eyes on you now you're standing in the way of my happiness, Pat don't you know that you're bad reminder in my life?..What do you want from Me?

Voice: Venus Mtanami.

I stopped talking with my eyes slightly opened along with my mouth.

I sniffed, I wanted to cry more but now not because of the anger but because of how emotional it left me hearing my grandmothers voice.

Me: Granny?!

Her: oh my child?

Me: Granny are you okey?

The day my aunt married me off, I cut all

contacts with the rest of my family, even with her..Max told me it'd be disrespectful of me to constantly contact them as he and the Khanyile's were my new family and Aunt Pat agreed with him, however, though I didn't keep in touch with aunt Pat..Maxwell and her would talk every once in a while.

Her: things are bad here mtanami, I'm not well.

She was sobbing and that tore my heart apart. I love my grandmother and she loves me too, the only reason I didn't move in with her after my father died was because of school, I couldn't switch schools in the middle of the year though it was just primary and as much as I wanted to, and with Pat being my aunt, living with her was not such a bad idea to the the rest of the family.

Me: Granny please don't cry.

Her: Do you want me to die without seeing you mtanami?...why? why Venus?

She was now crying out loud and I could tell she

was not well, her voice carried so much grief.

Me: I'm sorry Mah but..

She cut my sentence.

Her: Don't do this to me, come visit me child...please.

How can I say no to that?, She sounded so sad.

Me: I promise I will come granny I promise.

She sniffed.

Her: Don't abandon me please.

Only if she knew how much I've been through, she wouldn't say that but I don't blame her she was against my marriage in the first place.

We bid goodbye and I wiped my tears, just then Tyson walked back in.

Another one of my worries, now it's not only that I have one thing to tell him but now I also need to tell him that I need to see my grandmother.

He looked at me as I continued to wipe my tears but he didn't say nor ask anything, he just pulled the covers and went inside the blankets.

The next day I woke up and he wasn't next to me and even the time we were in the same room he'd give me the silent treatment even Mama D picked up the tension but unfortunately she couldn't do anything about it.

This carried on for a week, at first I'd talk to MamaD when we're at a dinner table just to break the silence but now with her gone it was a little hard and tonight he decided he won't join Minnie and I.

Me: want more juice pumpkin?

Her: No, may I have ice-cream?

Me: emm okey finish your food first while I take this food to daddy. I'll make you ice-cream when I come back.

She nodded

I let out a sigh before entering the study room.

Me: Here's your food.

He didn't say anything he just moved some papers making space for me to place the food.

I looked at him, He was still serving me the silent treatment and it was more unpleasant now because I wanted to talk to him about visiting my grandmother.

Me: Tyson.

Him: Mhh?

His eyes were still fixed on the papers in his hands.

I looked at him then attempted walking out but before I could reach the door he pressed a button under his desk and the door automatically closed. I turned to look at him and he stood up.

Him: I'm listening.



I cleared my throat.

Me: Pat called me a few days ago.

Him: Pat?

Me: My aunt....her call brought a lot of bad memories that I didn't really want to awaken...I've come a long way Tyson I don't want to go back to the old me who was living in constant fear, anger and hatred, I just want to live my life and be happy with you, without any of my family member ruining it....and...and Tyson I'm sorry I kept the call from you.

Him: But Rato you can't run away from your family.

Me: And that is one of the reason I didn't tell you, I knew you're going to say that and I don't want anything to do with Pat.

He looked away then back to me.

Him: okay I'm sorry.

He opened his arms and I threw myself at him. I

missed him holding me.

He broke the hug.

Him: Rato you shouldnt keep things from me.

Me: I know, you don't know how stupid I feel right now for not telling you earlier.

Him: at least you still look beautiful even when you feel stupid.

We both smiled, Oh well I blushed.

Me: another thing....my grangmother wants to see me, she's not feeling well.

Him: When?

Me: I'm not sure I still have to report at work first.

Him: I'm flying to KZN tomorrow noon, why don't we go together but I won't stay long just one night and I'll be back, you can stay behind of course.

Me: emm sounds like a plan but what about

work? and Minnie? We can't leave her on her own.

Him: I'll talk to Skhumbuzo, he'll organise an emergency leave or something and I'm sure Amanda won't mind watching Minnie till I get back.

I looked at him and smiled.

Him: What?

Me: Why didn't I tell you everything earlier?

He chuckled.

Him: No one knows what's going on inside that head of yours.

I playfully pushed him.

We shared a kiss and after he opened the door I went out to prepare for my trip.

~~~~~

The flight to KZN was not that bad with Tyson by my side holding my hand. Soon as we landed

we took a cab to his house then he drove me to my grandmothers house in Durban, Emlazi.

Before I even got out of the car the neighbours were already peeping through the windows, searching for their next gossip. It's been long since I last set my foot here. Not much has changed but there was a little improvement where infrastructure was concerned.

Tyson opened the door for me and I stood next to him as he took my luggage out.

Him: and that's it.

He said as he took out my last bag.

I didnt plan on staying for too long but my bags stated otherwise.

Me: Thank you baby.

I leaned over and kissed him.

Him: Are you sure you'll be okey.

I nodded.

Him: Call me before you sleep or if you need anything.

Me: Okey baby I will.

Him: I love you.

I smiled and blew a kiss his way.

Me: I love you too.

I watched his car take off then I let a huge sigh before knocking.

[08/29, 08:47] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*CONTINUATION\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I walked in only to find the house full. Almost everyone was there, from the cousins I last saw when I was young, aunts almost everyone. As soon as I walked in Nokthula came my way and

we shared a hug.

Her: Oh look who's here.

Me: you've grown up, look at you?.

It was a good moment I give you that,  
regardless all the anger I had in me it was so  
nice seeing my family.

Her: Come on I'm older than you remember?

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Only a few months old.

We both laughed.

Her: Come, Granny can't wait to see you.

we walked to the dining room which was house  
full, I also noticed faces I wasn't familia with.  
The room went silent when I walked in.

Me: Sanibonani!

Granny: Ahh mtanami.

I put my bag down and went to hug her.

I realized she was sitting on a wheelchair and she had her lower body covered with a small blanket.

I greeted everyone else, Aunt Pat was also there and she looked older then when I last saw her. Nokthula introduced me to the others which were just little children of my different cousins.

Thula: And this little one right here is Bandile, my bundle of joy.

Me: ncoew he's a replica of you....Hey boy!?.

He giggled as I tickled him.

Time went on and we were having supper while watching Generations, it was hard because the dining room couldn't accommodate all of us at the same time but we squizzed ourselves in like we'd do when there were ceremonies, good old times. I was really having fun till Pat decided to spoil it.

Pat: So Venus, unjani umkhwenyana?

Me: I don't know good I guess.

Pat: Mhh.

I looked at everyone and it was all eyes on me.

Me: Nokthula where is uncle Vusi?

Thula: emm he...Uncle Vusi died.

That came as a shock, why wasn't I told? he's my uncle!.

Granny: I thought I'd never see you, even when I was bed sick everyone came but you didn't\_ we've burried more than five family members but you never attended.

Cousn: okey kids let's go to bed.

Everyone stood up and left, it was now me, granny, Pat and other aunts along with Nokthula. My family was saturated with women, we had less males...only the young ones.

Granny: Even when I sent Patricia to you, you never responded.



I looked at Pat because in that room she was the one person who knew the truth, I was never told about anything. She just looked back at me showing no remorse.

Me: Granny I..

My other aunt cut my sentence.

Her: Where are you staying Venus?

I cleared my throats.

Her: Is it true that you're staying with another man in another city while the Khanyile's are busy searching for your missing husband.

Pat: Venus you are such a disgrace to this family, why couldn't you close your legs like the rest of the kids here?, I've always seen this attitude of yours thinking you're better than everyone else.

Thula: Mah that's enough!

Pat: Shut up wena, you're just like her, busy going around sleeping with every notorious

good for nothing gangsters, you should worry about that barsted child of yours and stay out of this!.

Okey, I always knew that Pat was heartless but never in my life had I imagined her talking to her own daughter like that. Thula was now fuming in anger I could tell she was really hurt.

Thula: Leave my son out of this, we both know that you're only mad because I refused to marry that old hag called Mkhize, Patricia you lived your life and there's no way I'm letting you live mine too.

Pat: Fine then, continue sleeping around you little hoe.

Things were getting worse every minute, The others tried to cool things but Thula and Pat were having none of that.

Thula: ahh you're such a bitch, a money loving bitch at that.

Pat stood up at that moment and slapped Nokthula so hard that she held on to the couch for balance, she placed her hand where Pat hit her.

Pat: Rubbish.

Thula was so angry that she turned over and slapped her mother back.

I stood up and held Thula back because it looked like they were going to fight. The others held Pat who was surprised by her daughter's act.

Pat: When did you become so disrespectful?

Thula: I am my mother's daughter.

Aunt: ai Nokthula?!.

Granny: Shut up!.....all of you shut up.

Thula clicked her tongue.

Thula: I'm out of here.

She went to one of the bedrooms.

Granny: see what you've done Venus? ...why mtanami why do you insist on making us a laughing stock in this township?...why?

Me: You know what I'm tired, really I am.

I was married off....no actually sold off to an old man who abused me every chance he got, I lived in constant fear always making sure I do nothing to piss him off. Don't tell me about shaming you, I've suffered hell and back in the name of "Lobola money"... one that you, all of you here enjoyed while my body was being used as a punching bag...you, aunt Pat, don't tell me about respect...you don't deserve it from anyone....I came to you as my auntie hoping you'll help me but you...you sold me off...for what?...money that's not even here today?...all of you here can sit around and...and gossip about how Venus made us a laughing stock as if you're perfect, Yes I'm living with another man and guess what I'm happy....for a first time in a very long time I can smile and be happy without

worrying that tonight the beast will force himself on me so yes I left Max for another man and there's nothing any of you could do to change that, Max could be missing for decades if he wants I couldn't careless.

Granny I'm sorry I made you a laughing stock, but it ends today...you can tell them that I'm no longer your grandchild or that I'm dead it doesn't matter, I'm sorry I was not there the time you were sick but you weren't there for me too when I needed you.

I stood up and came back with my luggage.

Aunt2: this is enough, Pat you've really messed up this time around, Venus my brother's daughter please don't go.

Me: It's okay aunt....and as for the rest of you who think I'm the black sheep and don't deserve love like the rest of you, don't worry it's not contagious!.

I pulled my suitcase and walked out.

Thula: Venus wait.

I turned and looked at her.

Me: Nokthula Please I'm.....

She cut my sentence.

Her: I'm really proud of you.

We both smiled.

In honest truth I was proud of my self too because I was not angry anymore, I said all that I wanted to say and after that I felt so peaceful and free.

Her: So where're you going to go?...it's after eight there no taxies.

Me: ah don't worry about that, I'll call Tyson.

Her: Tyson mhh....sounds interesting carry on.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: Let me call him first.

We continued walking while I called Tyson. The

phone rang unattended till it took me to voicemail.

Me: Looks like he's busy.

Before I could finish my sentence He called me.

Him: Sorry I missed your call Rato, is everything okey?

Me: Yes everything is okey, are you busy?

Him: not really I was about to take a shower.....how did it go?

Me: Not good, I'm on the streets as we speak.

Him: what happened?

Me: It was too much, I couldn't deal with the drama.

Him: okey baby I'm coming.

Me: thank you baby.

Him: wait!, don't you have somewhere you can wait for me in the meantime? ...it's not safe out there.

Me: Tyson we're in my township people know me.

Him: I'm serious Palesa.

Me: I'm joking, I'll wait at a friend's place okey.

Him: okey I'm coming, I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I dropped the call and Thula was looking at me impatiently.

Her: out with it already.

I laughed.

Me: His name is Tyson and I love him.

Her: Come on tell me more.

I laughed.

Me: No.

Her: I'll get you.

We both laughed.

Me: Nokthula what's the story between you and



your mother?

Her: that one is evil to the core, all she ever cared about is money...it doesn't matter who she hurts in the process of getting that money.

I chuckled.

Me: trust me I know what you mean.

Her: jea.

Me: and Bandile's father?

She let out a sigh.

Her: okey don't judge...it's Mdu.

Me: Mdu who?

She looked at me

Me: Mdu as in like "the Mdu"...the boy with a stinking attitude and scary eyes?

Her: Yep.

Me: I thought you hated him.

Her: I did.

Me: Mdu Mhh.

We continued talking about old days in the township until we saw Tyson's car approaching. I stood up from the huge rock I was sitting on.

We got inside and we first dropped Nokthula home and we took off.

We found Mama Mavis watching Khumbulekhaya when we got there.

Tyson: Mamzo, I'm back.

I went to greet and hug Mamzo.

Her: How are you my child?

Me: I couldn't be any better.

Her: Good to hear that.

Tyson: Baby, Mamzo is coming with us back to Pretoria tomorrow.

Mamazo: I said I'll think about it.

Him: what's there to think about?

She gave him a look and he chuckled and walked out.

Me: Please Mamzo it'll be really nice having you around.

Mama Mavis is Tyson's house helper, she's been with the family since Amanda and Tyson were young, she was their nanny.

Her: okey okey...but only if we'll drive...I'm not flying.

I laughed at her serious face.

Me: Trust me I couldn't agree more...goodnight.

I walked out leaving her with her TV.

I got to the room and took my shoes off, I heard the shower water running.

I peeped through the glass door. I went back to the room, took my clothes off and wrapped a towel around my body.

I tipitoeed my way to the bathroom and knocked.

Me: Baby?.

He half opened the shower door.

Him: Rato.

Me: Can I join you?

Before he could answer I dropped the towel and he moved back making space for me to enter.

I got in and stood right under the shower tap, the water hit hard on my body then off to Tyson's.

I looked at him with a smile.

He even stopped showering and just stared at me but I acted like I don't see him.

He walked closer and tried to touch me.

Me: Baby I'm trying to have a quick shower then go to bed, I'm tired.

Him: ah Baby come on.

His eyes turned red I could tell he wanted me with all of him.

I walked closer and kissed him but just as he was about to enjoy the kiss I pulled off.

Me: Tjo I'm really tired.

He pulled me by force and our body collided leaving me gasping.

He passionately kissed me and I couldn't wait to feel him inside me.

He lifted my leg up and slowly made his way in, I felt every inch of him as he pumped me hard.

Me: Gosh! ahh..Tyson..baby.

Him: baby shiii.

I tried to be less noisy but it felt so damn good I couldn't help it.

I felt my knees going weak, My leg was literally shaking.

Him: Baby.

Me: ahh..mhh oh! ahh!

Within minutes we both came calling each

others names.

He looked at me and I looked back, forgive me but I wanted more.

I rubbed my body against his and he looked at me with a smile.

He strongly grabbed my waist and I breath out.

He carried me to the bedroom but I couldnt wait till we get to the bed we ended up having on the floor. Gosh this guy knows his story and he knows just how to handle my body.

After our blissful love making he carried me to bed and we dozed off to lalaland.

~

~

[Tyson]

I woke up in the morning and Rato was still sleeping, she looked so peaceful.

I got in the shower and got dressed then went

downstairs to make my baby breakfast.  
Unfortunately there were no junk and staff so I  
just brought her sliced fruits. She was still  
sleeping when I got in with the plate. I leaned  
over and kissed her.

I continued french kissing her until she woke up.  
She looked at me with a smile.

Her: Good morning.

She stretched her arms.

Him: Good morning baby.....sit up, I brought  
you breakfast.

She sat up and put the plate in her thighs.

Her: going already?

Me: I'm meeting with some client for early  
breakfast.

Her: Okey baby, have a nice day.

I kissed her and walked out.

I came back very late we ended up going home

the next day because Mamzo insisted on driving then flying and I couldn't drive late at night especially because I was dog tired.

[08/29, 08:52] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

- 
- 

\*\*\*\*\*22\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

We got home during the day and Tyson rushed to work while I helped Mamzo settle in. Tyson was really busy these days but nevertheless he made time for me and I appreciated that. After I introduced Mamzo to the rest of the stuff I went to bed, I was so tired with all this driving up and down. I woke up around noon because I had to fetch Minnie from Amanda's house.

I passed Mamzo washing dishes in the kitchen.

Me: Mamzo



Her: You look like a mess.

Me: I feel like a mess, I'm so damn tired.

She laughed.

Her: Then where are you going?

Me: I'm fetching Minnie from Amanda's place.

Her: ohh pass my greetings to her and the family.

Me: Will do Mah, let me go so that I can hurry back.

Her: okey.

I drove off to Amanda's place but her and Skhumbuzo were still at work, stupid me I forgot but looking at the time they'll be here any minute. Meanwhile I made small talks with their house help.

Me: Mhh smells divine.

Her: I can dish up for you if you want.

Me: Please, I don't know when last I had

steamed break and tripe meat.

Her: My daughter also loves it.

Me: I don't blame her.

She dished up for me and I ate while waiting for Amanda. I tried feeding Minnie but she was busy playing with Lwazi.

Her: Candy feed him the bread.

Me: No baby, he's still young for bread.

Amanda walked in being followed by Skhumbuzo.

Amanda: Oh thank God you're back, please take your pumpkin with.

I laughed.

Minnie: Uncle.

She ran to Skhumbuzo and he picked her up.

Me: I bet she was giving you a run.

Amanda: Mhh you don't know, I love my niece

but she talks way too Much.

Her: Aunty.

Amanda: It's true Minnie.

We all laughed.

Me: In that case let's go home Minnie.

Her: But I want to stay here and play with Lwazi.

Amanda: No baby go home daddy misses you.

Me: You're one aunt you know that.

She chuckled.

Amanda: I came back late from work to babysit a five year old who talks like a ten year old, not only that she also made me feel bad for not feeding her the way you do.

I chuckled.

Me: I don't feed Minnie, she can feed herself.

We looked at Minnie who buried her self giggling in Skhumbuzo's arms.

Skhumbuzo just laughed shaking his head.

Amanda: what?!....you know what, just take her home before I murder her.

Me: Mamzo sends her greetings.

Her: owuu Mamzo Mara I miss her yaz.

Me: In that case you should pay us a visit.

Her: Mamzo is here ??

I nodded.

Minnie: Mamzo!.....Mamzo!...

She was jumping joyfully Skhumbuzo had to put her down.

Minnie: Candy let's go.

She said pulled my hand.

Amanda gave me Minnie's bag and we drove home.

Unfortunatly Minnie had to go to bed without seeing Mamzo because she fell asleep on our

way home.

Me: She's going to be so disappointed..

Mamzo: Don't worry she'll see me when she wakes up.

We both exited her room.

Me: Mama can I ask you for a favour.

Her: OK child.

Me: May you please cook steam bread for us tomorrow.

She chuckled.

Her: And here I was think it was something serious.

We both laughed.

Me: It is serious.

We carried on talking while I was helping her cook dinner.

Her: Kanti when is Tyson coming home, should I

dish for him?

Me: No Mah, he sent me a message he's working late.

Her: okey.

My phone rang and I looked at the caller Id it was Nokthula.

I moved from where I was sitting with Mamzo.

Me: Poppie

Her: don't even start with that name.

I laughed.

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm good hey.

She sounded down.

Me: Is everything okey?

Her: Venus you might hate me after this but she begged me and I couldn't say no.

Me: What are you on about?

Granny: Venus.

Me: oh no, Granny please not today.

Her: Don't drop the call please.

I let out a sigh.

Her: Nokthula told me, she told me everything from the abuse since you were young to you being married off, I didn't know Venus....I asked you and you said you were sure you wanted to marry him.

Me: That's what I was told to say, I was eighteen Gogo, I knew nothing about marriage..all I wanted was to go to school.

Her: And the beating? rape? why didn't you come to me then or talk to someone.

Me: I told Pat everything, she said "Venus he's your husband, she paid Lobola so he can have sex with you and if you stop pissing him he'll stop beating you"....

Her: What about me? you could've come to me.

Me: Well it doesn't matter now.

Her: Venus.

Me: No Gogo, this changes nothing, it doesn't change the fact that you saw me as a disgrace or the fact that I want nothing to do with you.

Before she could respond I dropped the call and clicked my tongue.

I went back to the dining all pissed.

Mamzo: What's wrong?

Me: Family.

Her: Mhh neh we love them but we hate them.

Me: Well I hate them and I hate them.

Her: You don't mean that.

Me: Trust me I do.

Her: You know no matter how angry or pissed you are at them, fact still remains they are your family and that will never change.



Me: Not if I can help it.

Her: Girl, no man is an island, you'll need them someday it's nature, living on your own is not nice ask me, I've been doing that for years now...I stayed angry at my mother for years and when I finally got over it she was no more.....Even in this day I wish I could go back and forgive her so we can be family again.

Me: You don't know the things they put me through.

Her: You don't know the things she put me through either and it doesn't matter...I'm not saying forgive them now, I'm just saying don't be angry forever life is too short.

She stood up after saying that.

Her: Goodnight Rato wakhe.

I flashed a smile.

Later I also went to bed, I kept on thinking about what Mamzo said. I have forgiven them I know I

have but I don't think we can ever sit down and be family again, No!.

I dozed off to sleep and I was woken up by Tyson getting into bed.

Me: Baby.

I said that with a very sleepy voice, my eyes were still closed.

Me: You're back....do you want me to warm up your food?

Him: No Rato sleep.

I did just that and within a minute I felt his strong arms cuddling me.

~

~

[Sizwe]

I was on a phone with this loud irritating old woman.

Me: And?

Her: She choose him.

Me: over her own family?

Her: Family that married her off to a beast?  
don't be surprised because I'm not.

Me: Patricia don't you dare call my brother a  
beast.

Her: He tried to kill her....who shoots his own  
wife?

Me: She was probably cheating on him and my  
brother found out.

Her: Nonsense, your brother is a heartless  
bastard.

Me: Oh really?, so says the woman who sold her  
own niece for money.

Her: Go to hell.

Me: After you, but before that make sure your  
skanky niece break up with that boyfriend of  
hers or...

Her: or what? are you threatening me?

Me: My brother paid you good money, now you don't want your family to know that you got more than just Lobola money.

Her: You wouldn't dare.

Me: Make sure they break up and be fast.

Her: What is it to you?...you said Max is dead anyways.

Me: exactly...and as per tradition Venus will be my wife.

Her: that's wicked, even if I manage to break them apart...she will never agree into marrying you.

Me: Just worry about your mission and I'll worry about mine.

Her: so this what this looks like to you? a mission?...she's my niece!.

Me: that didn't stop you from doing all the bad

things you did to her, listen I'm a busy man I can't worry about your silly little stories...make sure they break up or you'll regret ever taking money from my brother.

I clicked my tongue then dropped the call.

Looks like things will go smother than I thought.

As I was lost in my thoughts I received a call from an unknown.

Me: Hello.

Voice: Can I speak to Mr S Khanyile?

Me: Speaking, who's this?

Him: Oh Sir I'm Mr Dube, Maxwell Khanyile's lawyer.

Me: what can I do for you?

Him: I was hoping we'd talk, face to face.

Me: I'm currently out of the country so..

Him: it's really important that you hear this, when do you think you can coming back?

Me: Okey, emm let's just say I'll make a plan.

Him: Okey fair enough, thank you.

I dropped the call.

I wonder what could so important.

~

~

[Venus]

Another week passed and Tyson and I were crazy in love. I hated every minute away from him and it got worse because he was less around, He said he was working on a huge deal and I tried to understand though it was so damn hard, it even got to a point where I'd cry myself to sleep because I missed him so much.

Mamzo: Wakey wakey.

She shock me up as I sleeping on the couch.

Me: Mara Mah.

Her: Ai you sleep too much suka!.

Me: I'm tired!

I threw my hands to demonstrate my tiredness.

Her: Come.

She pulled my hand.

Me: Where are we going?

Her: Shopping.

Me: it's Five o'clock in the afternoon?!

Her: Perfect, the mall is less noisy.

Me: Can't we do this some other  
time?...tomorro

w maybe? I need to sleep.

Her: No I have to cook we're out of groceries  
and tomorrow I'm busy.

I was so irritated but I drove her to the damn  
mall.

My irritation got worse when I noticed that she  
only picked a few veggies, like really? she woke

me up for that?.

After our little shopping we drove back.

Her: Can you drop me off at Amanda's ?

I love Mamzo really I do, but tonight she was really trying my patience.

Me: Fine.

She could see how annoyed I was but she just smiled.

We got there and she took out a bag I didn't even know was there.

Her: Go now before it gets darker.

Me: Don't you want me to walk you in?...wait are you spending the night here?

She nodded.

Why didn't she just say so? because I can tell that's what she wanted....for me to drop her here...why drive all the way to the mall? aisuka!.

Me: okey say hi, and give Minnie a kiss.



Minnie became so attached to Lwazi so I let her sleep over a few days ago and now she doesn't want to come back home.

I drove back home in my tired state and when I got there I saw Tyson's car packed in the garage.

That alone lighten up my mood. I've missed him so much. I ran inside the house eagerly and I checked all the rooms but he wasn't there. I got back and sat in the dining room with my broken heart until I heard music coming from the balcony.

---you're every step I make, and I...I want to spend all my life with you, no one else but you---  
-.....My favourite song.

I wore my smile and rushed to the balcony.

I stopped by the door and looked inside.

The lights were dimmed, colourful candles and a very well decorated table...not forgetting my

handsome man looking fresh as always.

Him: Aren't you going to join me?

He took out his hand for me to hold and I looked at myself.

Me: Can't I changed into something else first?

I was wearing denim high rise jeans, a top with lace on the chest, a leather jacket and high hilled ankle boots and the setting there needed a very formal dress with hills.

Him: You look perfect.

I smiled and walked in.

Tyson looked at me, more like he was scared I'd panic but I just walked freely, "it's just a balcony , nothing will happen to me"...I kept repeating those words in my head.

I sat down and Tyson served us, it's like he knew how hungry I was, after our dinner he poured wine for us. Not much words were exchanged we just enjoyed being in each

other's presence.

Me: I'm really impressed.

I smiled and he smiled back.

He stood up and knelt with one knee in front of me.

Me: Baby?!

He cleared his throat.

Him: The few months you've been in my life I learnt a lot of things and to love again is part of it.....I know it's only been few months like I said but that is enough for me to know that I want to spend the rest of my life with you....Rato..Please make me a happiest man alive and be my wife.

I looked at him with tears roaming inside my eyes, I've always wondered what was so emotional about being proposed to and yet here I am, crying.

All I managed to do was nod because I couldn't

find words rich enough to tell Tyson how much I wanted to be his wife.

He slid the ring through my finger and we shared a hug.

[08/29, 08:52] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*23\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I was laying naked in Tyson's arms after our morning glory. I couldn't stop looking at the rock on my finger, It's the exactly one that I was eyeing at the jewelry shop and that means one thing and one thing only, Amanda helped Tyson choose my ring. I looked at him with a huge smile as he was busy running circles with his fingers on my naked butt.

Me: I love you.

He smiled and kissed my forehead.

My phone rang on the side, Tyson passed it over and I answered without checking the caller.

Me: Dr Johnson hello?

Caller: Hi Dr, apologies for calling in the early hours.

Me: It's okey, how can I help you?

Her: I'm calling from Nancy property agency, we found the kind of apartment you requested.

Me: Ohh.

Before I left KZN I wasn't planning on staying in the hotel so I searched for an apartment but it took longer than I thought and now I stay with Tyson.

Me: Emm owk can I come check it out first?

Her: Most definately.

Me: Okey we'll talk.

I dropped the call and gave the phone to Tyson

so he can put it back.

Him: everything owk?

Me: yes actually that was Nancy property agency, I once asked them to find me a house.

Him: ow and they found it?

Me: Yes, I'll be checking it out soon and if it's big enough I'm taking it.

He raised his eyebrow and I laughed.

Me: So that I can use it when I decide to open my own practise.

Him: that's.....that's very thoughtful of you...You're smart ass.

Me: I know.

I rolled my eyes playfully and my phone rang again.

Me: I'm starting to think I'm a celebrity.

He chuckled and passed me my phone.

Me: Hello.

Him: Dr Venus, Mr Dube speaking...Maxwell Khanyile's lawyer.

Me: oh how can I help you?

Him: Can we meet up and talk?

Me: Talk about what?

Him: I prefer not saying this on the phone.

Me: Mr Dube, Maxwell and I are divorced and you know it so whatever it is...

Tyson looked at me just as I say Maxwell's name.

Him: Dr Johnson It will be in your best interest to come.

Me: Fine let's meet at the Dante Mall...12 o'clock.

Him: Unfortunately we'll need a more quiet place to do that and I'm not available today and so are the rest of the family members.

Me: rest of the family members?

Him: Let's meet at the Nzinga firm...on Thursday 10:30 sharp.

Me: well I'm also not available on that day.

Him: Dr Johnson like I said, you need to be present...please make a plan.

Me: fine.

I dropped the call after he said thank you.

I looked at Tyson and he looked right back at me. I could tell he wanted to know so I told him everything and surprisingly he had no objections or maybe I couldn't read his emotions on this.

We spent the rest of the day indoors enjoying each others company and later that day Amanda and Skhumbuzo came to drop Mamzo and Minnie, I showed them my rock and they were happy for me but not as much as I was happy for myself. Days went by fast and I



couldn't be more happier...I was even gaining weight and the reason I wasn't complaining is because it was in all the right places like my butt.

~

~

[Tyson]

It was Wednesday night and I was at the netcare Hospital talking to Skhumbuzo in his office.

Him: Calm down man either way it was bound to come out.

Me: But not like this, where is Amanda? maybe she can talk to her.

I attempted walking to Amanda's office.

Him: She's at home, Tyson listen.

I walked back in and sat down.

Him: talk her out of it, she listens to you....tell

her not to go.

Me: it's pointless, the fact that the whole family will fly all the way just to be present it means it's fuckin important and I know how it works....nothing happens unless everyone is present.

Him: And they will try by all means to get Venus there.

Me: exactly.

Him: My man you have to tell her.

Me: She'll hate me after this, I practically lied to her.

Him: she'll hate you more if she finds out from somebody else.

Me: You don't get it Skhu..

Him: I do ,Yes she will be angry for some time but she loves you, she'll forgive you eventually.

I battled with my thoughts for a while, Skhu

could be right.

Me: You're probably right.

Him: I am.

I stood up and went to Venus's office. I needed to talk to her before she goes to the damn meeting tomorrow...I found her eating muffins.

Me: Rato.

Her: mhh these are delicious baby, want some?

Me: No thank you.....emm Baby we need to talk.  
She gave me her attention.

Her: sounds serious.

She pointed at the chair.

Me: No I'll stand.....I have something to tell you,  
I want you know that I didn't mean to keep this  
from you....

Before I could finish my sentence a nurse  
barged in.

Nurse: Dr you're needed in ER12.. it's Baby Millan, we're losing her.

She quickly stood up and wore her lab coat.

Her: sorry baby, we'll talk when I get home tomorrow owk?

She kissed my cheek and walked out, giving me no chance to respond.

~

~

[Venus]

I hate working night shifts it's tiring and draining, I spent hours in ER with a newborn fighting for her life. I finished later than when my shift end and I was already late for my meeting with Mr Dube so I rushed home, took a quick shower and grabbed an apple on my way out.

I got to the Nzinga firm and I was directed to some huge office where I found the Khanyile family sitting around the table.

Me: Sanibona.

I sat down next to Zodwa who looked irritated to be here.

Mr Dube: Good, now that we are all here we can start.

Sizwe gave me a stare.

Mr Dube: As we are all aware that Maxwell Khanyile has been missing for months now, in his will there's a clause which reads " Family, I will never abandon family...no matter what circumstances are, I'll contact at least one member to keep in touch, therefore if I get missing for more than two months treat me as dead and mourn me".

Mr Dube: do we all understand?

I mumbled "weird" .

Who would write that shit, unless....unless he was involved in a lot of bad dealings with dangerous people and knew that one day things

will go south.

Mr Dube: OK, I'll start with the reading of the will..."To My young brother Sizwe Khanyile I leave 40% shares of all my property businesses, my frenchies businesses and My red range rover, given that he vows to take care of my father.

Mr Dube looked at Sizwe and he nodded.

Mr D: To my ex-wife Dr Venus Johnson I leave my house, a full share of the farm and the rest of the 60% of all the property business and the remaining cars.

That came as a shock, why would he do that? and the fact that it's written ex wife it means the will was drawn recently.

Mr Dube: that's it.

He closed the file.

Zodwa: That's all?

Max's aunt: Ex wife?

Everyone looked at me.

Me: yes, we're divorced, Mr Dube can testify to that.

Max's Dad: But you're wearing a ring.

Sizwe: Must be from that new boyfriend of his.

aunt: What?, it's not even a year you've jumped to someone else?

I looked down, I was not in a mood for drama.

Sizwe: actually that's what I wanted us to talk about after this meeting...Venus can not remarry.

Me: Why? who would stop me?

I said loudly.

Sizwe: You're a Khanyile will forever be.

Me: Like I said we're divorced so..

He cut my sentence.

Dad: We paid your bride price, papers don't

change anything...we introduced you to the ancistors as one of us, you and Sizwe will have to get married.

Me: What?!

Sizwe: yes.

He looked at me with a smirk. He must be crazy if he thinks I'll marry his arrogant ass.

Mr Dube: actually, Max made it clear not to ever bother Venus, let her choose her future.

He passed the file to Sizwe who read it and angrily threw it on the table. Max's Dad picked it up.

Dad: this is insane.

He shouted angrily.

Him:she can't be spending my son's money with another man!

Me: Well then keep it!.

I was getting pissed.



Mr Dube: Impossible...she's not allowed to sell the shares or anything else for five years.

Dad: fine then but you will pay back all the money we paid for Lobola, that one is non negotiatable.

Me: Fine by me!.

Sizwe: With interest....if we knew you'd divorce we would have used the money for something else, like investments.

I gave him a stare, I don't even know why he's talking...he didn't contribute to my bride price, he was a schooler then and had no money.

Me: fine.

Sizwe: Ten million.

Me: What?!

Him: it's either that or you don't remarry.

Me: Fuck you!, your family paid less than that, way less.

He chuckled.

Him: Like I said, we could have done a lot with that money....who knows maybe your family invested it and they are getting more.

Me: They didn't, that money was all used before I even noticed.

Him: none of our business, like I said take it or leave it.

I looked around the table hoping someone will be on my side on this one but even Mr Dube raised his shoulders in defeat. I had tears running on my face.

"I'll pay it".

We all looked at the door and Tyson walked in.

Tyson: Your ten million rand, I'll pay it.

Words escaped my mind. I just looked at Tyson who wasn't looking at me.

His eyes filled with so much hate and anger and

it was all directed to Max's Dad who returned the dead stare right back at Tyson...I also noticed the surprise in the rest of the family's eyes except for Zodwa who was still angry that Max left nothing for her.

[08/29, 08:52] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*24\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Sizwe: Tyson?

Tyson's eyes shifted from Mr Khanyile to Sizwe.

Max's Dad: Tyson Khumalo?..oh so this is "the" Tyson Khumalo.

He said that with a smirk and Tyson's eyes reflected so much coldness.

Tyson: Rato.

He kissed my cheek as I welcomed him with a hug.

Mr Dube: Excuse me but I have somewhere to be.

I looked at him.

Like really? he's really going to leave us here?.  
He saw the tension in this room he can't just leave, by the look of things anything can happen here I mean anything....we need someone to neutralise things just in case.

Me: Are we done here?..I really need to get home I'm tired.

It was after twelve in the noon already.

Tyson: let's get out of here.

Max's Dad: just like that?....no "Hi family?"

Tyson gave Mr Khanyile a dead stare and took my hand in his, we attempted walking out.

Max's dad: Say hi to my "sister in-law", Lord that

woman!.

I don't know when and how but before he could finish his sentence Tyson had already flew across the room and knocked Max's father off the ground...he fell down along with his chair.

Tyson: stay away from my mother!.

He was fuming in anger.

Aunt: wooo wait, Tyson you might think you're grown but you have no business laying your filthy hands on your uncle!.

Me: Uncle?!.

I looked at Tyson and he looked at me with begging eyes.

I kept on waiting for him to tell me that she's lying and she's crazy but he didn't.

Sizwe: Washa!.

He let out an evil laugh.

Uncle?....Max's father is Tyson's uncle?

I felt the room getting smaller, I knew that if I don't get out in the next second I will suffocate.

Ty: Rato wait.

I walked out in speed, my car keys are the only thing I managed to take with me, my hand bag was left behind....I needed to breath.

I got inside my car and drove away, I had no destination I just drove njer.

Why would he keep such thing from me?....does this mean he's Max's cousin brother?...this is so messed up and everytime I tried to make sense of it I get more confused.

~

~

[Tyson]

Me: You better run!, run fast because I am coming for you, you will pay for everything you did.

Sizwe: so you keep on saying, let's face it you lost your touch.

I clicked my tongue and walked out.

I drove home and on my way I received a message from a very long number.

-----do you know how to make pancakes?....-----

I deleted the message without reading the rest of it.

Me: Bloody adverts.

I got home and Venus's car was nowhere to be found. I tried calling her but her phone rang inside her bag which I had with me.

Me: damn it!.

I had no other option then to call Zach but unfortunately he was unavailable.

I had already forgotten that he was out of the country on a huge business deal which could pay off very well for The Crips.

It times like these where I wish I was more technically literate, I could've tracked Venus by now but computers are more of Zach's thing than mine.

My phone rang and it was Amanda.

Me: Amanda.

Him: No it's me, how did it go?

Me: Skhumbuzo, not good my man...she took off.

Him: tjo that's extreme...I knew she was going to be angry but leaving you?.

Me: No..no not like that...she stormed out of the meeting.

He let out a sigh.

Him: you gave me a fright.

I heard a car driving in, I peeped through the window and it was Venus.

Me: She's here gotta go, please ask Amanda to



pick Minnie from school.

Him: Sharp.

I dropped the call as Venue walked in.

I looked at her.

Her: I am ready to hear what you have to say.

~

~

[Venus]

Me: Are you going to talk or not?

He cleared his throat.

Him: emm mhh.

Me: Max...is he your cousin?

He nodded.

Me: And you didn't think it I needed to know that?

He shifted his eyes from me.

Me: Were you even going to tell me?

Him: Rato it's a long story.

Me: try me.

He remained silent.

Me: Tyson is you don't talk to me who will you talk to?

He didn't respond.

I started walking away because it looked like Tyson is not ready to tell me the truth and I was done begging.

Him: We are relatives.

I turned to look at him.

Him: Max and I, we are cousins.

Me: How is that even possible?.

Him:Our grandfather, He had a wife who gave birth to Ben, maxwell's father....he also had an affair and my father was conceived. Because my father was an illegitimate son he took his mother's surname Khumalo. Him and Ben grew

to be good brothers even though they had different mothers, they started a gang together...ruled the streets but things changed when My father meet Mama D, Ben had this obsession with her and my father didn't like it.

I watched him get emotional as he continued telling me the story however he was trying so hard not to show it.

Him: To cut the story short, when my father died we moved in with Ben and Max who had just lost his mother .Ben made us sell drugs at the age of 14 and we had no problem because I knew we needed to eat and with Max's help it was easy bacause he was old people gave us no hassle, Ben introduced us to gangsterism both me and Max.

Life was bearable and going until he tried to force himself on Mama D.

I knew right then that I had to grow fast and protect Mama D and Amanda so I stabbed Ben

and left him to die and unfortunately he didnt so MamaD, Amanda and I ran away, We've been doing a lot of running until I started my own crew which became enemies with Max and Sizwe's crew.

One day they kidnapped Minnie's mother in hopes of us giving them money that we had just hijacked and when we gave it to them it was already late, Max and Sizwe had already killed her....We couldn't even see her at the funeral because they shot her in the head.

Me: I'm really sorry.

Him: it's okey, Ben managed to convince me that Max and I are brothers so If I kill him I will never be able to live with it, he knew how much I value family...but all along Max was protecting Sizwe who is the one who pulled the trigger.

Me: and because Sizwe is not Ben's biological son and not your relative...you could have killed him.

Him: yes but it doesn't matter now because I will kill him, I'm sorry I kept this from you.

Me: it's okey....but in future Tyson don't keep things from me...good or bad..

let me decide for myself.

Even though I wanted to be angry at him, I couldn't...we all have a past and a few secrets...what I didn't like was him deciding for me that I wouldn't handle the truth.

Him: I promise.

Me: Good, now is there anything else I should hear?...I don't like surprises..

He cleared his throat.

Him: I blackmailed Mr Dube.

I raised my eyebrow.

Me: Why?

Him: After I found out that Max left you everything I asked Mr Dube to alter the will, at

first I wanted everything to be on his father.

Me: Why?!

All the feelings I had of forgiving him were out of the window.

Him: I was trying to protect you.

Me: really?...or maybe you were trying to protect your secret?

Gone were the calm me, I was now screaming and shouting.

Him: That too but if you received everything like Max wanted you to, the Khanyile's wouldn't have left you in peace...they were going to fight you.

Me: oh and because I'm weak I can't fight back?

Him: That's not what I mean and you know that.

Me: What do you mean then?

Him: Venus, I didn't think this would be a problem?.

Me: it's not, the problem here is you making decisions for me without informing me.

Him: Okey I'm sorry, if it's the money then I'll pay it.

Me: How dare you?

Him: I don't mean it like that.

Before he could finish his sentence I climbed the stairs and locked myself in my room.

For a first time I felt lost and trapped.

I felt like my independance was threatened.

After my fair share of crying I was hungry, I walked in the kitchen and found Tyson sipping on of his expensive whiskey. I gave no attention to him I just did what I was there for.

Amanda walked in holding Lwazi.

Her: You better fill my patrol tank.

Tyson: That's Skhumbuzo's job.

Her: No no no, not after you made me drive all

the way to Minnie's school for nothing.

Him: What Is that suppose to mean?

Her: exactly that....you and your naughty daughter.

I sat next to Amanda.

Tyson's face changed.

Him: Amanda! where is Minenhle?

Her: didn't you pick her up?

Him: No I told Skhumbuzo to....

She cut him.

Her: I did but when I got there the security guide told me that her father picked her up.

Tyson stood up and disappeared to one of the rooms.

Me: What's going on.

Her: oh Lord No!

[08/29, 08:52] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:



Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*25\*\*\*\*\*

SHORT

[Sizwe]

Me: Scelo, I'm on my way.

Him: Just calling to tell you that we have the little girl.

Me: good, did you send the message like I told you?

Him: Yes I did.

Me: I hope you didn't leave any trails.

Him: what do you take me for?...i've been doing this all my life...show some respect.

Me: I know, I just don't want complications.

Him: and you won't get any...who are you

messing with anyways?

Me: It doesn't matter, you just make sure you guide that girl with your life she's my ticket to getting what I want.

Him: didn't your father teach you never to mess with a nigger's family? especially little kids.....who ever you're messing with is red in anger right now and that can't be good.

Me: exactly what I want. I have his daughter so he will make sure I get what I want.

Him: I just hope you know what you're doing....oh and now that I got you what you wanted when can I expect the goods to be delivered?

Me: Like I said I'm on my way...we'll talk when I get there.

Him: don't take too long I don't like waiting.

Me: cool.

I dropped the call.

Scelo is one of the toughest gangsters and he wants to expand his business from drugs to diamonds and I have diamonds meaning he's eating out of my hand. Not that I want to cross him though because he's bad news...he once made a guy eat his own intestines so just imagine what he's capable off.

~

~

[Venus]

Tyson got back in a room holding a gun and his phone.

I know I planned on not talking to him but this is important I can always continue being angry at him after.

Me: Tyson what is going on?

I just became emotional out of the blue.

Me: Tyson what is wrong?

Him: I don't know but what I know is that someone out there has my daughter and I have to get her back.

Me: what? who? why?

Amanda started sobbing loudly.

Her: Ty..do you?...do you think...?

Him: I don't know Amanda but I hope it's not him because there's no stopping this time around.

Me: Tyson!

Him: stay here don't go out, if something happens call me!.

Me: But Tyson....

Him: Damn it Venus stay here don't go out!

He spoke with so much authority and I had no choice but to obey.

He clocked the gun and put it on the side.

He went to set the alarm on and walked out.

Him: no one leaves this house!.

I nodded because I could tell he was stressed so I didn't want to add and like I said, I can always be angry at him after this whole thing.

~

~

[Tyson]

I drove like a maniac all the way to the hospital.

I walked straight to his office but he wasn't there.

Me: Zee...I'm looking for Skhumbuzo!.

Her: He's in a conference call.

Me: damn it.

I hit the desk.

Me: How long will it take?

Her: I'm not sure...approximately 45 minutes.

Me: I can't wait that long this is urgent.

Her: let me go check on him.

Me: tell him that I said TCOU.

Her: TCOU got it.

She disappeared and Skhumbuzo appeared in a second.

Him: Who are we dealing with?

He asked as we walked to the pack lot.

Me: I don't know but they have Minenhle.

Him: What the fuck!

Me: I think Sizwe is behind it.

We got to the car and drove to the hotel the Khanyile's are staying in.

~

~

[Sizwe]

I got to the house where Scelo kept Tyson's daughter.

Me: Did you have to keep her in your house?

Him: yes, it's a last place anyone will look.

Me: That's clever.

Him: jea.

Me: expect a call about your stuff tomorrow, right now I want to meet the little girl.

Him: Third room from the kitchen.

Me: you've really out done yourself ..this house is beatiful a little isolated too.

I walked in leaving him smoking outside.

Me: oh hi.

Her: Hi.

Me: I'm uncle Sizwe, your Father's friend.

I gave her my hand but she ignored it.

Her: I've never seen you before.

Me: That's because I live in another country.

Her: like overseas?

she opened her eyes widely.

Her: I also want to go overseas.

Me: really?

She nodded excitedly.

Me: okay finish eating your food I want to talk to uncle Scelo.

Her: okay.

I walked out leaving her fascinated about overseas...little did she know I stay her in Congo.

Me: no reply?

Him: No.

Me: Are you sure you sent the message?

Him: do I look like a fool to you?

He gave me a dead stare.

Me: I'm just surprised he hasn't responded.

Him: what now?



I rubbed my forehead.

Me: We wait.

I know Tyson might be cooking something right now but I have his daughter.

[08/29, 08:52] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*26\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Me: excuse me ma'am we're looking for Mr Ben Khanyile or Sizwe Khanyile we believe they are in this hotel.

Her: who's asking?

Skhu: What's that suppose to mean?

Her: We don't give out that kind of information unless you're from the authorities and have the necessary documents.

Skhu: listen, we're either doing this the easy way or the hard way.

He showed her the gun.

Me: Don't you dare think of pressing that panic button!.

Her: emm I.

Me: room number.

Her: We only have Mr Ben Khanyile he booked five different rooms for six people the other two are sharing.

She was literally shaking.

Me: room number?!

Her: Who's room sir...?

Me: Are you that fuckin Dom?...Ben Khanyile!

Her: room ahh..

She was going hard on that computer.

Her: Room K305...third floor.

We quickly left the reception to Ben's room.

He was in a shower when we got so we decided to wait for him in the open plan room.

Him: Who's there?..I didn't order any room service.

He was shouting from the shower Skhumbuzo and I remained silent.

Him: I said I...

He stopped when his eyes landed on us pointing guns at him.

He had a towel wrapped on his waist.

Him: Twice in a day mhh...oh hi Skhumbuzo.

Skhu: you still remember my name? I'm impressed.

Me: Where's my daughter Ben?

Him: Am I suppose to know her?

Me: Ben I'm going to ask one last time...where is she?

Him: And I'm going to say this once...I don't know her!.

Skhumbuzo clocked his gun.

Skhu: You're sure cheeky for an old man like you.

Him: So I've been told...

Before He could finish his sentence Skhumbuzo and I had already put bullets in him. I armed for the knee and Skhumbuzo hit the arm.

He screamed in agony.

Skhu: Allow me?

He directed that to me.

Me: No I'll have this one.

I moved closer and shot his other knee.

Him: Fuck!

Me: My daughter Ben?

Him: I don't know I swear.

Me: here! Call your son.

I tossed him his phone.

Him: voicemail.

Me: I guess this is then....rest in pieces uncle.

Him: Tyson...my nephew please don't.

I moved two steps backward and started firing non-stop.

I only stopped when Skhumbuzo touched my shoulder.

Skhu: Enough! come let's go.

We left him laying there lifeless.

Me: Where the security room?

Her: it's...it's second room near the storeroom.

She was pointing.

Skhu: Come with.

She left the reception and led the way.

She opened the door and some security guy

was sleeping on the chair.

Skhu: No wonder we managed to pass the reception.

Guy: what's going on?

Me: Don't worry about that....we want you to delete the footage from when we walked in here and pause it till we get out.

Him: I can't....

I shoved my gun inside his mouth.

Me: You can and you will.

He nodded.

I removed the gun and he went to the computer.

Him: Done!

Me: Make sure. no one goes inside room K306....no one until my guys get here okey?

They nodded.

Skhu: and we were never here!

Me: yes, if word gets out that we were here I'll make both of you bury your family members every week, I'll slaughter them one by one.

They nodded again and I must say they were pretty scared and that arouse feelings that had been laid to rest, the feeling of being in charge.

Skhu tapped my back.

Him: Let's get out of here.

We walked out.

~

~

[Venus]

Three days gone and we're still looking for Minnie.

Tyson was losing patience and I dont blame him, who wouldn't ?

I couldn't even eat not knowing if Minnie was still alive? if she has eaten? had something to

drink or wear.

The world is full of so much cruelty and she's just five.

Amanda: I will never forgive myself if something happens to her.

Mamzo: Don't be too hard on yourself.

Amanda: I watched Skhumbuzo breakdown when Minnie's mother was found dead...I can never survive that.

Mamzo: shii.

Me: I just hope she is safe where ever she is.

Amanda: I have a good idea of suing that damn school.

I sniffed and stood up.

Me: Amanda go get ready.

She wiped her tears.

Her: Where are we going?



Me: to the damn school.

Mamzo: ai Tyson will...

Me: We'll deal with him when we get back.

She sighed.

We freshened up and drove off...we had no time for make-up...it was in the morning and Tyson and Skhumbuzo were not there.

We got to the school and Amanda swang opened the door.

Her: open the gate.

Security: Good morning ma'am.

Her: Don't good morning ma'am me just open the damn gate.

He could tell that she was crazy furious so he opened it and I drove in with Amanda walking in following me.

Miss: Oh Good morning you must be Minenhle's....

Me: What kind of a daycare do you run?

Her: excuse me but....

Me: you're excused ...didn't I tell you to do your job well? huh?

Amanda: My niece is missing and she was taken from school days ago...what do you have to say for yourself?

Security: is everything alright.

I don't know when but Amanda landed her hand in his cheek.

He got furious too but he knew better than hitting her back.

Amanda: you stupid man...don't you know who's Minenhle's father.

Miss: We get your frustrations but that will not be tolerated.

I turned and walked closer to her.

Me: Don't fucking tell us you get our

frustrations....do you have a five year old girl in the hands of strangers who could do all sort of bad things to her?..you pray we find her or hell will break loose nxi.

I turned to walk away.

Amanda: Trust me you will be hearing from my lawyer and that would be my brother...

She looked at the security.

Amanda: Minenhle's father.

She clicked her tongue and we walked to the car and took off.

When we got in the house Tyson and Skhumbuzo was back.

Tyson: Don't you two listen?

He was shouting as we got out of the car.

Him: Where the hell were you?

Me: We went to the school.

Him: Damn it Palesa I told you to stay in the

house! I can't worry about Minnie and the two of you at the same time!

Skhu: Tyson calm down.

Me: I'm sorry.

He didn't say anything he just walked back inside the house.

Mamzo: He's just stressed don't take it to heart.

I nodded.

I badly wanted to cry but I restrained myself.

Tyson: Maybe he was right, I seem to lose my touch.

Skhu: Fuck that.

Amanda: anything?

She asked as she sat next to Skhumbuzo.

Tyson gave her a dead stare, he was still angry at us.

Skhu: You're sure that no one called you that

day? a massage maybe?...the people who have her got to want something.

Tyson: No calls or what so ever only the...

He stood up like he had something in his mind.

Skhu: come on think!

Tyson: on my way back from Nzinga firm I received a massage from a very long number....something about.....pancakes.

Oh shit!..jea why didn't I think of that.

Skhu: That can help...show me the massage.

Tyson: shit!

He swang his hand around.

Tyson: I deleted it....I was rushing to talk to Venus and..

He looked my way and I looked down.

Tyson: I thought it was one of those adverts.

Skhu: damn!...okey let me try Zach.

Skhumbuzo called Zach and He picked after a long ringing, He was on loud speaker.

Zach: Skhumbuzo My man I can't talk right now.

Skhu: We're calling to find out if we can retrieve deleted messages from Tyson's phone?

Zach: Yes but only before 72 hours.

Skhu: Damn it.....Can't we do something about it?...if it's after 72 hours?

We heard gunshots from the background.

Zach: Listen I got to go, I'll call you back.

He dropped the call.

Tyson: Nigerians are going hard on Zach.

Skhu: looks like it but I know he's got it.

There was silent for a while.

I didn't even want to utter a word.

Tyson: only if people will tell us where the fuck Sizwe is.

Sizwe?..is behind this?...but why?

I looked at Tyson.

Skhu: and we can't keep on killing these people.

Tyson: well I can, I know he's working with someone...question is who?.

~

~

[Sizwe]

Minnie: Uncle, you said daddy will fetch me soon?

Me: Yes and he will.

Her: But it's been days..I don't even go to school not that I'm complaining but I miss Candy.

Me: I bought you chocolates and Candies this morning.

Her: No not that Candy.

I looked at her.

Her: I want to go home.

Me: I told you daddy is busy he can't take care of you.

Her: what about Mamzo and Candy?

Me: Mamzo went to church.

Her: and Candy?

Who the fuck is that, anyways I didn't even want to know...these kids be having imaginary friends and name them all sort of names.

Me: listen, let me go call your dad okey

She nodded.

Scelo walked in.

Him: Can we talk, outside?

I followed him out.

Him: My house is not a hotel.

Scelo is a smoker, he always have a cigar in his hands.



Me: I don't know what's taking long.

Him: fix it! I want the kid gone before the end of this week.

Me: come on it's not like she cries.

Him: jea but she talks too much and asks a lot of question.

I chuckled.

Me: Give me the phone I'll send him another massage.

He tossed it to me and I started typing.

~

~

[Tyson]

Mamzo was the only person who kept her cool. I had to tell the other members of the stuff to go home because I didn't know what was going to happen and their safety was not guaranteed, they were hard at first but Venus told them that

they'll receive they full pay and they agreed.  
That's how much people love money but I don't  
blame them...it's uncontrollable.

Mamzo: Hey...all of you come!

She led us to the kitchen.

Her: sit down and eat before y'all pass out .

I let out a sigh and we all sat down.

Venus started sobbing.

Mamzo: ai maan Rato wakhe...don't do this to  
yourself.

Amanda: I can't eat...I can't sit here and eat not  
knowing if Minenhle has had something to eat.

Skhumbuzo held Amanda's hand.

I looked at Venus who was sobbing in Mamzo's  
chest.

My phone beeped.

I took it and it was a message.

-----you sure can play games?...this has gone long enough...finale warning-----

Skhu: And that?

Me: A message from Minnie's abductors.

I gave him the phone and he started typing.

Me: What are you doing?

Skhu: finding out what they want.

My phone beeped again and Skhumbuzo widely opened his eyes.

Me: What?

He showed me the message.

----- I say a girl for a girl...tomorrow 20:00pm sharp...make sure she's alone with my ten million..it will be great help on our wedding day....no funny business or the little girl die----

I looked at Venus and threw the phone on the table.

Venus: what do they want?.

She reached for the phone and I tried grabbing it first but it was too late...she read the message.

Amanda: talk to me already?

She just gave her the phone to read for herself and Mamzo also.

There was silence for a while.

Venus: I'll go.

Me: Forget it.

Her: It's me they want I can't let Minnie pay ....

I cut her sentence.

Me: Venus I said forget it.

I was kind of shouting and she got angry, ran upstairs and locked herself inside our bedroom.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*27\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Amanda: So what now?...we have less than 24 hours.

Skhu: and we have to be careful...we all know that Sizwe is crazy he'd hurt even a little innocent child to prove a point....and he doesn't bluff.

Me: I know.

We all battled with our thoughts for minutes.

Me: I have an Idea....we'll track the number....yes we'll track it...I'll get DK on the line.

Skhu: don't be too excited...Sizwe once cut our phone connection without us knowing...I doubt he'll leave a trail like that.

Me: Well it's my only option because there's no way I'm sending Venus to that crazy bastard!.

Amanda: plus there's no telling of what Sizwe will do to her.

Me: I'll go check on her...Skhu please get DK on the line.

I went to the bedroom and knocked a thousand times before Venus opened the door.

She was already in her pyjamas...looked like she was sleeping.

Me: I know it seems like I'm trying to control you but trust me...it's for the best.

Her: Tyson if something happens to Minnie I won't be able to forgive myself knowing that I could have saved her.

I put her head in my chest.

Me: shiii nothing will happen to her...I'll make sure of it.

She sniffed.

Me: sleep Rato...rest.

I kissed her forehead and after some time she drifted to lala land.

I carefully moved out of bed...making sure not to wake her up.

I couldn't sleep with all the thoughts in my mind.

I went back to the dining room and it was only Skhu left now, He was drinking whiskey.

Me: Found DK?

Him: yes...he's on it.

Me: Thank you man.

We fist bumped.

Me: get some sleep, you don't have to cross night with me.

Him: of course I do.

We both chuckled.

Time went on fast. It was the next day noon already, only a few hours till 20:00 pm.

Amanda: I don't like this, each time the hand on the clock moves my mind moves with it....Tyson find my niece before I lose my mind.

She was crying and so was Rato and it became more frustrating with DK still struggling to trace the number.

Someone buzzed and it was DK.

I buzzed him in and within seconds he was inside.

He had a computer in his hand.

Him: It's a lost case ...the reason behind the longness of this number is to keep it magnitude of being untraceable and it's extra hard now because these kind of sims are sold almost everywhere.

Me: Damn it!

I banged hard on the table.

Me: let's go.



Venus: Where are you going?

Me: like I said, someone is working with Sizwe and I have to find that someone.

We walked out leaving Venus, Mamzo and Amanda behind.

~

~

[Venus]

It was now 17:56, I know that because I couldn't stop looking at my wrist watch.

Tyson, Skhumbuzo and DK walked in looking like a mess. This whole thing was taking a strain in everyone.

Me: Tyson!

He looked at me.

Me: Let me go.

He shock his head no.

Me: Please....I want to do this.

I looked at everyone and it was dead quiet I swear you'd hear a nail hit the floor should it fall.

Me: Please!.

DK: and if we could put a tracker on her it'd be easy to find her.

He directed that to Tyson .

Tyson: still, it's dangerous.

I walked closer to him.

We were now only a breath away from each other, Our eyes we locked together. I could feel his breath hit my face.

Me: I trust you.

I saw all the worry vanish from his eyes when I said that.

He nodded and everyone started breathing, more like they held their breath all this time.

I flashed a smile and went to my bedroom

I took a quick shower then wore a pair of jeans, black nike sneakers, a white vest and a jacket. The jeans were a bit tight with the little weight I've gain so I changed into leggings just in case I'm forced to run at some point.

I walked downstairs with a million thoughts on my mind, I know Tyson doesn't approve of leggings...he says they are too revealing to be worn in public he'd rather I wear a bumshort....crazy I know.

I cleared my throat and he came my way.

Him: you look beautiful.

I flashed a smile.

Me: Thank you.

Everyone was looking at us other than DK who would focus on the laptop then on his phone at the same time.

Tyson's phone beeped and he took it from his pocket.

-----From the gate take a left, walk until you see two cabs, any wrong move can lead to your daughters death----

We all focused as he read the message.

Skhu: It's time.

Amanda came and hugged me with tears running on her face.

At first I wasn't scared but right all I could picture is my funeral. I hugged everyone a little longer because this might be the last time I see them.

After that I hugged Tyson for a full beautiful seven minutes, yes I was counting.

Me: I love you.

Him: I promise I'll find you.

I turned to walk out the door.

I took the long walk until I saw two cabs like I was instructed.

~

~

[Tyson]

DK: got it.

We looked at him.

DK: the sims might be sold everywhere but it's in only one store here in Pretoria. My guys visited the shop and it merely a tuckshop on the streets....but across the road there's a hotel with cameras which recorded a guy buying the card a day before the little one was taken, we got the file on the guy and another camera recorded him driving towards the school on that day but we were not sure if he was going to the school.

Skhu: so it could be coincidence?

DK: that's what we thought until we found a picture of him shaking hands with Sizwe Khanyile.

Me: Who's the guy?

He showed me his photo.

Skhumbuzo and I looked at each other.

Me: Scelo?.

Skhu: Scelo?.

We spoke in unison.

someone buzzed.

Amanda: Who's there?

Minnie: Auntiiiiii I want to pee!

Amanda: oh God Minnie.

She ran outside and came back holding her. She got down and I hugged her for dear life and after I let go and put her down She kept on crossing her legs and moving sideways.

Mamzo: let the kid go to the toilet.

Amanda accompanied her there.

Me: DK do you have his address?

He wrote it down from the computer and Skhumbuzo and I hit the road.

I took out my phone and called Scelo.

Him: Heita?

Me: Scelo?

Him: ta Rico.

Me: you kidnaped my daughter..and now you have my future wife in your house...do you have a dead wish?

Him: your daughter?....fuck! that was your daughter?...ta Rico I swear I didn't know.

Me: well you should have done your research.

Him: ta Rico.

I dropped the call.

~

~

[Venus]

Sizwe kept on shoving his tongue in my neck.

Him: strip.

Me: You're crazy.

Him: Crazy for you.

He removed my jacket and started brushing my thighs.

That's when I decided that I'd rather die than have another Khanyile raping me.

I pushed him off and reached for my jacket. He grabbed it and I backslapped him.

Him: Fuck!

He forcefully grabbed me and pinned me against the wall and rubbed the gun on my cheek.

The other guy barged in ready to explode in anger.

Him: Get the fuck out of here!

He directed that to me.



Me: What?

I wanted to go but I needed to make sure it wasn't a trap first.

Him: You!....you crossed me?

He grabbed Sizwe by his collar.

I started running away when I noticed them fighting.

Before I could reach the gate I heard gunshots from inside and I saw Skhumbuzo's car racing towards me.

Tyson got out and I wrapped my hands around his neck.

Him: Wait in the car.

Skhumbuzo got out of the car holding huge guns.

I got inside the car and locked the doors.

The guns started going off again till Skhumbuzo came out of the house holding Tyson's

arm...who was shot.

I hopped at the back with Tyson.

Me: Baby!

I put his head on my thighs as he moaned in pain.

Skhumbuzo started driving real fast.

I took off my vest and put it where Tyson was shot to block the blood.

Me: Hold on baby!

When we got to the hospital he had already passed out, the nurses came with a stretcher and Skhumbuzo attended to him.

An hour passed with me matching around the passage.

Amanda: sit down you'll make me dizzy.

I was so scared, last thing I wanted was to lose Tyson.

Skhumbuzo came out with a smile.

Him: We're all good.

I couldn't even wait for him to finish his sentence I walked inside Tyson's ward and found him sitting with a bandage around his stomach.

He looked up and smiled and tears just rolled down my face.

Me: damn you Tyson learn to use a bullet proof vest.

Him: and I love you too, come here!

He opened his arms and I embraced his body by hugging him.

Me: Don't ever scare me like that.

Him: I'm sorry.

He brushed my back.

Amanda: mhh mhh!

We broke the hug and looked at them.

Amanda: Can I hug my brother?

She bent her head to the side and I rolled my eyes.

Tyson kissed her forehead and they shared a hug.

Tyson: ahh.

Me: Not too tight Amanda!.

Skhumbuzo laughed.

DK: here's a new shirt.

Tyson: give it to Venus, she can't keep on walking around with a bra.

Skhu: jealous!

We all laughed and Tyson shock his head.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*28\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

This whole drama taught me a lot for instant,  
how much I love Venus.

That woman!....I can't even explain it and at first  
I thought that maybe it's because we're still new  
but now I realise that every day, every hour ,  
minute and second that passes by I love her  
more.

Zach: a penny for your thoughts?

I turned to look at him and he wasn't alone but  
with Shakes and Skhumbuzo.

Me: and where did you find this prodigal son?

Shakes chuckled.

Shakes: thank you for the warm welcome.

I stood up and we fist bumped.

Me: My man...

Shakes: ta!

Skhumbuzo: how is Namibia?

Shakes: oh the ladies there are to die for...damn!  
we laughed.

Skhu: where did you find this crazy man Zach?

Zach: He happened to be in Nigeria and he  
decided to pay us a visit.

Shakes: Zach turned that state upside down I'm  
telling you.

I bumped Zach's shoulder.

Me: That's what I'm talking about.

Shakes: and....he killed Adebayo.

Skhu: What?

Me: What?

We asked shocked in unison.

Zach shock his head.

Zach: Every milk have an expiry date.

He chuckled after saying that.

Skhu: Meaning we now own the streets on that

side as well?.

Shakes: Exact'ma!

Me: Two more and we'll have more states than the russians and maybe finally shoved them out of Africa.

Shakes: Cheers to that.

Zach: you know what, that calls for celebration.

Shakes: Plus I've been longing for braai meat since I landed on this damn country.

Skhu: what are we waiting for then?

I took my car keys and we drove in separate cars , all the way to Shisanyama.

Shakes: Oh now this feels like home.....hello Nana!

He was speaking to some girl passing by.

Shakes: Guys look at that ass?

Zach: I can't...I don't want Candice putting a bullet on my head.

Skhu: Me too, Amanda would go all crazy on me.

Shakes: Tyson?

Me: Don't even think about it I'm engaged.

We all laughed.

Shakes: you guys are such bores...and wena Tyson talking about being engaged...I heard that Sizwe gave you a run for your girls.

Skhumbuzo clicked his tongue.

Me: jea he did raise a few....too bad I wasn't the one who killed him.

Zach gave me a stare.

Skhu: the minute we got there Scelo had already killed him.

Shakes: and you killed Scelo?

Me: He kidnapped my daughter.

Shakes smiled.

A lady came and we ordered meat and moved



to the braai stands.

Shakes: excuse me but I'm the only bachelor here so I got to taste the waters.

He stood up and approached the waitress.

Me: some things never change!.

We laughed looking at shakes giving the waitress a hard time.

~

~

[Amanda]

I was so glad that the drama was over because I was this close to a breakdown.

Now everything is back to normal apart from Minnie being sent to live on the farms with MamaD. Tyson thinks it's better that way and I agree with him, She's too young to be constantly dragged into his father's battles...even though she has no idea what

went on that time it's still not a safe life for her.

It's was a sunny day and I decided to pay Venus a visit, she hasn't been feeling well these days and I heard Shakes is back which means Tyson is not around, she's probably dying from boredom since she's not working.

I bumped into Mamzo in the dining room.

Me: Mamzo!

Her: aisuka wena you don't visit.

Me: ahh Mamzo you know between my demanding job and my son I don't have time.

Her: not even a few minutes to give me a phone call?

Me: Mamzo!

Her: ai!

Me: now I feel bad!

Her: you should....anyways Venus is dressing, she's just finished bathing because I know

you're here for her.

Me: Mamzo don't be like that.

Her: aisuka

She stood up and left as Venus walked in.

Venus: Amanda...what brings you here!

Me: I'm here to see you.

She widened her eyes.

Her: before you start...I told you I'm okey.

Me: relax I'm not going to start...you stubborn  
and I know I'm not going to win with you.

She laughed.

Me: I'm here to take you out!

Her: really?

She flashed a smile.

Her: you're paying right?

I rolled my eyes.

Me: obviously!.

Her: wait then I need to change.

Me: No you're fine, let's go.

She took her hand bag and we drove in my car.

We got to a restaurant and ordered sea food.

Her: is it me or it's a little too hot in here!

What's this girl talking about?...if we were outside I'd say she's right but there are air conditioners in here.

Her: I think I need some water.

She kept on blowing her face with her hand.

Me: excuse me!...may I have a glass of water please!.....Venus are you okey?

Her: yes it's just...

Before she could finish she collapsed and I freaked out.

Me: oh My God Venus.

I hit her cheek softly.

Me: Someone call an ambulance please.

See I'm doctor and I'm so not scared of blood or the sight we face ourselves with when treating patients on a daily basis but one thing I can never do is treat family unless it's not an emergency and the reason behind that is I panic too much when family is involved.

Anyways, the ambulance was taking too long that we had to carry her to my car and drive with her to the hospital, thank God the waiter helped me because she was damn heavy.

On my way there I called Skhumbuzo and he got there a minute after us, along with Tyson, Zach and Shakes.

Me: Baby!

I heard both my hands near my mouth.

Skhu: Where's she?

I pointed at the door.

Tyson attempted following Skhumbuzo.

Skhu: no wait here!

Tyson nodded.

Tyson: what happened?

Me: We were.....we were having a meal at the restaurant and and...and she fainted.

Tyson held me as to comfort me.

Me: I should have seen she was not well...what kind of a doctor am I?

Tyson: shii don't worry.

I was so worried I give you that, reason being  
.....I was scared that maybe she hit her head  
hard the time she fell.

After sometime Skhumbuzo called us in and we  
found Venus putting on her top.

She looked so angry.

I rushed there and gave her a squizz...I could  
feel a lot of weight lifted off my shoulders.

Tyson: Rato.

She didn't respond.

Amanda: what was wrong baby?

I directed that to Skhumbuzo.

Venus: I'm pregnant.

She looked right into Tyson's eyes as she said that. Tyson's face lightened up. his mouth didn't have to smile because his eyes had already did.

Zach: Congrats.

He bumped Tyson's shoulder.

Venus: I'm eleven weeks pregnant Tyson..

She was still angry and soon the others picked that up.

Shakes: oh no run!

Zach and Shakes quickly walked out laughing.

Tyson just kept on smiling, this whole pregnancy things was really making his day.

Out if the blue venus started throwing pillows at Tyson.

Me: I think we should also go!

Her: eleven weeks Tyson!.

Tyson: Rato what's wrong with that?

He asked as he was diving the pillows.

Venus: You knocked me down the first day we had sex!.

Skhu: you're right, let's go.

We walked out...leaving Tyson to deal with his angry "eleven" weeks pregnant wife to be.

~

~

[Tyson]

After all that shouting and crying Venus decided to stop. I don't know if she's angry because she's pregnant or she's angry because she's eleven weeks pregnant. Uuuu there's still to be



so Mich drama...I can only imagine the mood swing....Lord be with me.

Venus: I want to go home.

I didn't even utter a word because every time I did she got angrier.

I opened the door for her and we drove home.

Me: Want something to eat?

She gave me a dead stare and I knew better than to continue talking.

She sat on the dinning room watching TV with Mamzo who was over the moon to learn about the pregnancy and that irritated Venus even more.

Her: I'm going to bed.

Me: in that case you are heading towards the wrong bedroom.

Her: do I look stupid to you Tyson?

Actually right now yes...but I could say that now

can I?.

Her: I'm going to sleep in the guest room.

Mamzo looked at me and I raised my shoulders to show that I also have no idea what's going on.

I decided to let Venus be and go to bed myself. The way I was so tired I didn't even have the energy to take a quick shower.

After some hours I heard someone opening the door and I turned my head to find Venus. She opened the covers and got inside the bed.

Her: That room is cold.

lying...you missed me!

Me: mhh.

She was quiet for a while and so was I, she started cuddling her hands around me and I acted like I didn't notice.

Her: I'm scared.....I'm scared that I might not be able to carry full term.

I turned to look at her.

Her: I mean what if....what if..

Me: Don't.....stop thinking like that okey.....I'm here, you have me...nothing will happen.

Her: I've miscarried three times Tyson, I can't afford that to happen again I won't survive it.

Me: if its helps you, I'm scared too.

She placed her head on top of her hand.

Her: you are?

Me: yes...I know pregnancies can be very complicated but I know you'll pull through....you're strong.

She smiled.

Her: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

She leaned over and we shared a kiss.

Her: now I have to wait a whole year before my

wedding.

Me: why?

Her: there's no way I'm looking like a cow on my wedding day.

I chuckled.

Me: trust me that's impossible I mean look at you, you're almost three months and your stomach is almost flat.

Her: probably the reason why I didn't notice I'm pregnant.

Me: really...because I noticed the very first day.

She pushed me.

Her: you're lying.

I laughed.

Me: you've just made me the happiest man alive.

I kissed her and she flashed a smile.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:

Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*29\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

I woke up to see Venus standing in front of a mirror with nothing but her panties.

She had one hand on her stomach and another one slightly raised up. It looked like she's trying to spot the difference between her normal belly and the new pregnant one.

She kept blowing her belly and put her hand on her waist like those pregnant women, I couldn't help but laugh.

She turned to look at me.

Her: You're awake.

Me: You're pregnant.

She gave me a stare.

Me: Sorry I just can't help it.

I laughed.

Her: I think my belly is bigger today.

Me: really?...because just yesterday you said it was flat which I believe it still is.

Her: are you saying I'm paranoid?

Me: You said it baby.

I stood up and wrapped my arms around her sexy body.

Me: I could get used to this...

Her: What?

Me: Waking up to find you with less clothes on your body.

She chuckled and moved from me.

Her: jea right.

She went to fix the bed and I stood by the window watching her as she bent down to

nicely fix the bed.

Her: Don't stare.

Me: I can't help it....the sight is to die for, especially from this angle.

Her: Too bad the show is over!.

She took a towel and went to freshen up.

I waited and waited for her to finish up.

Me: Rato!.

Her: Baby!

Me: You've been in there for ages come out already.

Her: ahh Baby I'm still enjoy my bath.

Me: Rato!...I'm going to be late for my meeting.

Her: meetings on a Sunday?

Me: Just come out woman!

Her: Hard luck baby....I'm bathing for two remember?.

She giggled as she said that and I couldn't help but laugh....what the hell is bathing for two?.

Me: you know what I'll just use the other bathroom.

She opened the door just as I said that.

Me: at last!

She kissed my cheek and smiled.

Her: such drama baby.

I ignored her and went for my bath.

~

~

[Venus]

Tyson came out of the bathroom just as I finished dressing up.

Me: And what do you think?

I put my hands on my waist and posed like those magazine girls.



I was wearing a purple pencil dress which reached just below my knees, it was Lacey on the back so I put on a matching boyfriend blazer and purple platform heels.

I didn't put too much make up, just a few touch ups here and there and a purple lipstick...yes I was going all purple today.

Him: wow!

He had a towel wrapped around his waist.

Him: you look beautiful actually you're beyond the word.

I smiled.

Me: Thank you baby.

I walked out leaving him to finish dressing up.

I went to make breakfast for my man. Nothing complicated just a cheese and ham sandwich but I wasn't feeling like cheese so I ate peanut butter sandwich instead.

Him: jeez I'm already late.

Me: aren't you going to eat breakfast?

Him: Baby I don't have time I'm late.

Me: okey.

He kissed my forehead and walked away, I gave him a disappointed look.

He turned back and sat on the high chair.

Him: But I can spare a few minute to eat breakfast with my beautiful wife to be.

I flashed a smile.

Me: actually I can put your sandwich in a lunch box...you'll eat when you get the time.

He let out a sigh.

Him: mhh thanks baby, Mr Ntabeni was going bury me alive.

I chuckled.

Me: He's that difficult?

Him: you have no idea.

I gave him the lunchbox.

Me: but not as difficult as you.

He quickly ran out after saying that.

Me: I'll catch you!

Him: bye baby, I love you.

I smiled on my own and Mamzo walked inside the room.

She had a bible in hand.

Her: that's a decent but gorgeous outfit you got there.

Me: Thank you Mamzo.

Her: What's the occasion?

Me: actually I'm coming with you...to church .

She widened her eyes.

Me: don't be like that.

She smiled.

Her: that's one decision you will never regret.

Me: I know, I've been angry at God for too long...but he didn't give up on me instead he showed me yet again how much he loves me.

Her: you don't know how happy I am to hear that....you know what, let's go before we get late.

I took my hand bag and we took off.

The service was so beautiful..The pastor focused on the book of Job and somehow I felt like I relate. That man lost everything he had including his family...the kids, money everything and that's not all he also endured so much when his skin suddenly developed disturbing disease....you'd think that God foresaken him because he let all that happen to him but Job did not turn his back on God...even when his wife suggested it he did not give up.

That's what I want too...I don't want to give up on God, even though there were times when I thought he didn't love me I still don't want to

give up on him because just like Petro I know there's no where else to go besides God because all life is in him.....and God...God loves me.

After the service MamaD introduced me to some church members...I don't know how she managed to know so much people because she's just joined this church. Anyways after my introduction session we drove back home.

Two weeks passed.

The house was full, Tyson decided to throw a celebration party ..apparently business is booming and he's happy.

We were in the kitchen making salads as the guys were braaing outside.

Amanda: I don't know why she's torturing herself by sitting with the guys, She looks so lost.

Me: let her be.

I laughed.

Amanda: actually I blame you?

Me: what did I do?

Candice: you made her uncomfortable.

Me: I was telling the truth.

Candice: no you were being mean!

Me: That's not true....next thing you'll say I'm racist just because she's white.

Candice: are you?

Me: am I wh.....you know what just leave me alone.

Amanda: You have to apologize Venus.

I looked at them in disbelief.

Mamzo: okey I'm done here.

She moved the the pot from the stove, she was cooking pap because word have it that she cooks the best pap.

I took a few beers from the fridge and put ice on the cooler along with the beers.

Amanda: and that?

Me: I'm going to apologize to Sandy.

Candice laughed.

Candice: with beers?

I rolled my eyes and walked out with the cooler box.

Tyson: Hey easy.

Me: it's really not that heavy.

Nevertheless he took the cooler out of my hand and carried it.

Shakes: a woman who bring you beer, why didn't I see you first.

I smiled.

Tyson: Hey shakes..futsek!

They all laughed and Sandy looked at me.

Me: emm Sandy....don't you want to chill with us inside?

She was surprised.

Her: emm...

Me: Come on it'll be fun, plus we need extra hands.

I pulled her arm.

Her: okey I guess.

Tyson looked at me and smiled.

We got inside and Candice pored her a drink.

Amanda: mhh actually Venus has something to say you.

I gave her a stare.

Me: I do?...yes I do....okey emm Sandy I wanted to apologize for being mean to you...I'm really sorry....I know I have no excuse but please forgive me.

She smiled.



Her: It's okey I understand.

We shared a hug and I mumbled "Happy?" to Amanda who just winked and laughed.

The rest of the day was beautiful and I got to know Sandy better, she's not bad after all she's just a woman who endured pain in the name of marriage just like me.

Anyways after that little celebration everyone went home and it was just me and my babe....oh and Mamzo ofcouse.

I went for a quick shower and wore nothing but my bathrope.

I did a little dicky drive by to Tyson's study as he was busy with some work.

Me: Baby?

Him: sorry Rato this is taking longer than I thought but I promise I'll come to bed in no time.

I sat on top of him with my legs on the sides. I reached my hand to press the button and the

door closed.

Me: What if I told you I have nothing under this rope?

He cleared his throat and I wrapped my hands around his neck.

Him: Nothing?

Me: Nothing.

He ran his hands on my thighs all the way to my butt, then he tightly grabbed it.

I gasped.

Him: Rato you're killing me.

I kissed him while unbuttoning his pants.

I could feel his boner....I started moving slowly feeling every part of him.

I had shivers and I couldn't help but moan.

Mamzo: Bongani?

She was knocking.

Tyson: shit!

Me: No ignore her!

He looked at me and I gave him a dead stare which said if you dare say a word you're dead.

After a while she gave up and I started moving again.

This time Tyson was going hard on and just as I was about to cum I held on tight.

My whole body was shaking and we both came.

I gave him a baby kiss.

Me: That was really good.

I wiped him with my rope and walked out to take a shower.

When I got out of the shower my rope was not where I left it.

Me: No! no no no no Mamzo!

I ran to her and found her in the laundry room.

Me: Mamzo!

I took my rope from the machine.

Her: I was about to wash that.

Me: No this is clean.

Her: No it's not.

Me: I'll wash it myself then.

She picked up.

Her: ohh...I get it...that's very noble of you.

I smiled.

Tyson: everything okey?..I heard you shouting.

Mamzo: everything is okey, you have a nice woman right there!

Him: you say that all the time.

I pulled Tyson out with my rope in hand.

Him: and that?

Me: She almost washed my rope.

Him: damn!

We both laughed.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*30\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I was on a day out with the girls...Me, Amanda,  
Candice and Sandy.

Jea you heard right Sandy. She's been through a  
lot and last thing she needs is me being mean  
to her and being alone.

It is early summer so we were out on the beach  
looking gorgeous as always..We have been  
spending a lot of time together that is if we are  
not working. It was kind of hard with Sandy  
because her work hours usually clash with ours

but I'd occasionally ask Tyson for a favour now and then and with me being pregnant he knew better than to say no.

Amanda's phone rang.

Her: Baby?....no I told you we're at the beach....stop fussing we're safe!!!.

She kept quiet for a while then dropped the call.

Amanda: I'm this close to killing that man.

We are laughed at her.

Amanda: laugh all you want but we have to get out of here!.

Me: No we just got here.

Amanda: Skhumbuzo doesn't approve...apparently "they can't control what happens here because it's too crowded and spacious"

Sandy: that's why we are here right? for the space?.

Amanda: I don't know why he has this need to

control everything.

She was really irritated.

My phone rang.

Me: it's Tyson....Khumalo?

Him: Rato what are you doing half naked on the beach?

Me: ahh Baby I'm not half naked.

Him: that's not the point....get away from there!

Me: Why?

Him: it's too crowded...Rato stop asking questions and come home.

I pretended to be sniffing.

Me: okey.

I said sadly.

Me: but I was really enjoying myself but if you want me to come home then I'm coming.

Him: good.

He dropped the call and I looked at Amanda is disbelieve.

Me: No feeling sorry for the pregnant fiancé anymore?!

They couldn't stop laughing.

Amanda: your time of emotionally blackmailing my brother is over.

She stood up and fixed the camp chair.

I stood up with my pregnant belly which gave clear visuals that I'm carrying a someone.

Me: In that case this is the end of me.

Candice: why do say that?

Me: Tyson will now manipulate me into doing everything he wants.

I swang my hand in the air to demonstrate that.

Amanda: Welcome to my world.

Sandy: come on ladies it can't be that bad.



Me: well it is.

Amanda: the only person who's treated like an equal is Candice.

Candice: that's because I stood my ground and told Zach that it's either you accept me as I am or watch me leave you.

We laughed and high fived.

Me: You did good girlfriend!.

We talked about our crazy partners all the way to the parking lot...Sandy is the only one who had less to say but we tried by all means to accomodate her..she even shared a little about her ex-husband.

When I got home I unpacked my bag and went to get something to eat from the kitchen.

~

~

[Candice]

When I got home Zach was not in so I took a long warm bath. Put on my short summer night dress and went to make dinner.

I went all out with the food, even got my mother's recipes book and cooked Zach's favourite dish.

I heard his car pulling over as I arranged the table.

Him: Baby I'm home.

Me: I'm on this side?

He came taking his jacket off.

Him: mhh smells divine.

He kissed me.

Me: thanks baby sit down.

I dished for him and we started eating while having talks in between our meal.

Him: This was good, thanks again baby.

Me: I enjoy cooking for you.

He flashed a smile.

Him: baby we need to talk.

Me: sounds serious.

Him: it is.....we're thinking of going back to the gang...and be full hands on.

Me: ohh owk that's not a problem just tell me what you need.

Him: I need you to play far from the gang.

I thought he was joking until I saw his facial expression.

Me: what?...why?

Him: It's not safe baby and I..

I didn't even wait for him to finish.

Me: No....this is my life you know that, don't try to change me.

Him: I'm not...this will give us enough family time together.

Me: how? because you'll be out in a different wars now and then.

Him: And you will be home taking care of our children.

Me: what children?

Him: when we have them.

Me: so this is what this is about?...you want me to be house wife?

Him: there's nothing wrong with that.

I let out a sigh and walked out.

I don't know where all of this is coming from.

~

~

[Venus]

I don't know when or how but I must have fallen asleep.

I didn't even hear Tyson get into bed. However,

I'm woken up by sharp pains on my lower back.  
At first I try to ignore them and moan pain in  
silence but the pain gets deeper.

Me: mhh.

I breath in and out silently, making sure not to  
wake Tyson up. Then I feel a sharp one like  
someone just shoved a knife on that area.

Me: ahh...Tyson!

I shock Him once and he woke up.

Him: Rato, are you okey?

Me: I ....ahhhhhh!....my back.

He placed him hand where I felt pain.

Me: mhh.

Him: should I take you to the hospital?

He kept on rubbing me where I felt pain.

Me: No...I need...water!

He ran out and came with a glass of water...I

drank up and laid on his arms as his other hand was rubbing my back.

Later on the pain seized....it was in the early hours of the morning and I dozed off to sleep.

I was woken up by Tyson's movements in the room.

Me: You're wearing casual today at the office?

Him: No I'm not going in today...I'm taking you to the hospital.....I asked Skhumbuzo to squeeze us in.

Me: oh owk.... let me get ready.

He looked at me in disbelief.

Me: What?

Him:I never thought I'd see this day.....Palesa not being stubborn.

I rolled my eyes at him and went towards the bathroom.

Me: I'll have brown bread with avocado for my

breakfast.

He flashed a smile and started fixing the bed.

Later on we arrived at the hospital and we went straight to Skhumbuzo's office.

I explained everything to him and he instructed me to change into a hospital gown.

Me: I don't know why we didn't take Amanda instead.

I said to Tyson while we were waiting for Skhumbuzo to get back in the room.

Tyson: relax Rato.

Skhu: Owk please sit here...actually lie on your back.

He pointed at the bed and I did that.

Skhu: panties off, and open your legs please.

I looked at him.

Me: Why????!

Him: For measurements.

Me: I'm only four months pregnant...I'm very much sure that was not labour pains.

Skhumbuzo chuckled.

Skhu: Tyson?

Tyson: Rato please stop acting docter just for today and be a patient..a good one.

Me: but Tyson.....he will see my cookie.

I whispered to him.

Skhu: Don't worry Venus.

I finally gave in and opened my legs and he inserted his finger on me.

Him: owk we're still good.

I quickled closed my legs and got them down.

Him: Want to know the gender?.

I looked at Tyson.

Me: No, I prefer it to be a surprise.



Skhu: OK then.. please lift this up.

I lifted it and exposed my bump.

Him: this is a little cold.

He applied the jel and did an ultra sound.

After that I went to clean my belly and came back.

Him: everything is okey so far but you have to slow down on the workload.

Me: I can do that.

Skhu: slow down on those high hills too.

I rolled my eyes.

Tyson: I think she needs to take an early leave.

I widely opened my eyes.

Skhu: That could work too.

I didn't even get a chance to disagree they were practically ganging on me.

After that we drove home in silence...I really

didn't like the idea of taking a leave...what am I suppose to do during the day?...sleep?...that's.. I don't even know what to call it.

Him: Rato it's for the best.

I got out of the car banged the door and walked inside the house.

Days passed and I was going crazy every minute. I would sit around and do absolutely nothing because even Mamzo is on Tyson's side. I made sure to ignore him because he is so damn annoying at times.

It was in the afternoon when I decided to call Amanda just to catch up on the work gossip.

Her: You sound so down my brother is really giving you a hard time.

Me: You don't know.

She laughed.

Her: Well, you're not the only one....Candice is having it bad too.

Me: Candice?

Her: Yes...Zach wants her out of the gang.

Me: haa!

Her: and he wants babies.

Me: That's not a bad thing.

Her: to you yes but to Candice it's a No no.

We both laughed and continued talking until we hung up.

I heard Tyson's voice from the dining and I suddenly felt like crying.

Him: Rato!....Ra...ahh Palesa what is wrong now?.

I cried more...I even had hiccups.

Me: you want me to stay alone in this big house all day.

He brought me to his chest.

Him: that's not true.

Me: but you're never home!.

Him: okey I'm sorry I promise I'll be home more often.

Me: No....you won't.

Him: I will....okey how about we go away on a holiday..just the two of us

I raised my head and looked at him.

Me: really?

Him: yes.

Me: okey.

I wiped my tears and he let out a sigh.

Him: Rato slow down on the tears please they are depressing.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*31\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

By the time we got to Lesotho it was already late and though I badly wanted to explore the place already...I decided to save it for the next day.

Next day I woke up in the early hours, we were staying in some lounge which was all cultural and beautiful. The kind of place where loaded tourist would want to occupy for their visitation period.

I decided not to wake Tyson up, he looked so tired so I put on my gown, brushed my teeth, washed my face and went to watch the sun rise....It was a really good experience I give you that..I felt at peace.

The sounds made by the trees, the birds oh not forgetting the one made by the water as it hit their channel banks...the valley of a thousand hills. I could live here for a life time.

Not only the beauty but the closure it gave me...I was in Lesotho after all..the land where my very own mother's roots are.

Him: Rato wamie!.

I turned to look at him.

Me: Morning Handsome.

He reached out his hand and gave me a mug.

Me: ohh Milk.

Him: you sound disappointed....you know you're not suppose to drink co....

Me: I know I know.

I let out a sigh and kissed him.

Me: Thank you baby.

Him: My pleasure baby.

Me: not only for the milk.

I raised the cup while saying that.

Me: For the get away, the love, the care and for

making me the happiest woman on earth.

He took the cup from my hand and placed it on the floor and wrapped his hands around me.

Him: I love you Venus...with every part of me and nothing makes me more happy than seeing you happy.

We shared a long pationate kiss.

Me: Let me go get cleaned up...we have a lot of exploring to do.

He smiled and took my hand in his.

We spent the day exploring the place, we'd do long romantic walks, we even went horse riding but because Tyson is way over protective they had to put what looked like a chair and I had to ride with the instructor just to make sure I was safe.

I had a lot of fun I give you that and in the evening we were gathered around the fire camp listening to the native stories with the rest of

the guests. They were also traditional dancers who finished us with their amazing act. We went back to our room late at night and we both zoned out to dreamland.

The next day we went to a game reserve but we didn't stay long because the little one inside me decided he/she wants to sleep. Tyson drove us back to the house and I threw myself on the bed.

Him: That tired huh?

Me: You have no idea.

He took my swollen feet and started massaging them.

Me: Mhh that feels so good.

He smiled and continued doing his magic.

My hormones decided to deceive me and within minutes my clothes were flying across the room. Tyson carefully planted wet kisses from my neck to my crotch.

By the time he got there my lower body was



already raised on the air, He stopped and looked at me and I laid back down, He continued teasing my clit but stopped just as I was to come.

He stood up and wore his shirt.

Me: are you kidding me?!!!!!

Him: Rest Rato, you said you are tired.

I thought he was going to say I'm joking but I realised he wasn't when he took his phone and keys.

Me: Fuck you Tyson!.

I threw a pillow at him and he chuckled.

Me: Baby you're really going to leave me hanging?....where are you even going?

Him: I don't know.

I clicked my tongue and he kissed my cheek and went out.

I was so angry I don't even know when I fell

asleep.

~

I was woken up by a knock on the door, it was a bit dark outside.

Me: Hi!

I said with a sleepy voice.

Lady: Rato right?

I nodded, by that name I knew Tyson sent her.

Her: please come with me.

I followed her to some room where I was dined and pampered. After the full body massage I took a long warm bubble bath.

I swear I never felt so relaxed and new.

Lady: Please follow me.

Me: oh there's more?.

She nodded with a smile.

I followed her to another room, it was close to

the restaurant so I figured that Tyson wanted us to eat out.

I sat in front of the mirror and some guy who looked gay walked in with a make-up kit.

I laughed a little.

Me: Is this necessary though? I mean it's just dinner.

Guy: More reason to look gorgeous.

I smiled and let him work his magic on my face and he also did my hair...I looked so out of this world...(smiles).

Voice: Are you done yet?.

I quickly turned and found Minnie looking like a fairy princess in pink.

Me: pumpkin...

I picked her up and swang her around while kissing her.

Me: What are you doing here?

She giggled.

Her: You didn't think I'd miss your wedding did you?.

Me: My wedding?!

She put her hands on her mouth.

Her: Please don't tell Tyson I told you?

I smiled.

Me: I promise I won't.

Okey so Tyson planned my own wedding?, The guy will never cease to amaze me.. he is so unpredictable and I love every fibre in him.

Me: okey so my dress Minnie?

Lady: oh here it is.

She gave it to me and I couldn't hold back my tears when my eyes landed on it...It was just too much...I was also emotional about a lot of things...I so wish my father was here..I know he would have been so happy for me too.

I got inside the dress and the artist had to re-do my make-up.

I walked out of the room with Minnie leading the way. We got into this hall and we stood by the door.

Me: are you walking me down the aisle pumpkin?.

He shock her head no.

Me: then who's walking me?

Voice: I am.

I turned and jumped in excitement.

Me: Uncle Alson!!! oh Lord.

Him: Mshana!.

He kissed my cheek....He's my mother's cousin and I don't even know how Tyson got hold of him.

Him: let's go before the groom pass out.

I flashed a smile and we started walking.

My eyes were focused on Tyson who looked so...he was so...Gosh I don't even have the words.

The place was not huge but not small either....All the people that meant something to me were there and I couldn't be happier.

I didn't pay much attention to what the pastor was saying my eyes were fixed on Tyson's...that was until he instructed us to say our vows.

Us: I give you this ring as a sign of my love to you, a promise to fidelity. Along with it I give you my heart to have and to hold....to cherish and to take care. In sickness and in health, I promise to be Forever Yours.

Tyson: I do.

Me: I do.

Pastor: You may kiss your bride.

He leaned over and we kissed.

There was ululation from the crowd.

Minnie: Lwazi close your eyes.

She had her hands on Lwazi's face.

Amanda: hey leave him alone.

There was laughter.

After that everyone sat on separate tables and food & drinks were served. I kept stealing glances at my husband....Lord I love him.

Me: You know, now that you're my husband you can't pull that stunt you pulled earlier on?.

Him: Rato you are slowly becoming a sex addict.

Me: what?...No...it's not me it's the baby.

He laughed in disbelieve.

Him: really??...you're going to blame it on the baby?.

Me: whatever but keep it in mind that two can play that game.

He chuckled.

Him: Palesa we both know you can never deny me sex.

Me: ohja?...well there are ways to make you pay.

Him: like what?

Me: like this.

I leaned over and kissed him, I pulled out and ran my hands on his pants...

He tried to grab my hand but I was fast.

Him: Venus stop.

He was whispering, he tried to keep a straight face and I had the evil smile on my face.

Him: Venus!.

I stopped just as he went all hard.

I stood up and picked a glass.

Him: what are you doing?

I just smiled and softly hit the glass with a fork.

All attention was on us.



Me: We're ready for our speeches but my handsome husband will go first.....come on baby!.

I clapped my hands and the crowd joined me.

He looked at me in disbelief.

After a while he cleared his throat.

Him: actually we'll let others go first....thank you.

I laughed and he gave me a stare as I sat down.

Minnie went to the front pulling a chair.

She stopped in the middle and got on top of it.

Amanda: Minnehle get away from there what are you doing?

Her: delivering my speech.

We all laughed.

Amanda: Minnehle!.

Pumpkin was having none of it she continued with her speech.

Minni: Hi everyone.

She waved her hands in the air.

Her: My name is Minenhle Khumalo but you can call me Minnie.

She giggled.

Apart from her talking too much she's also fast.

Her: okey I am here to thank all of you for coming to share this beautiful day with my mom and dad...thank you so much.....Daddy?.

She looked at us.

Her: Thank you for making Candy my mom...Candy?...stand up.

I laughed and stood up.

Her: I love you mommy.

Crowd: Ncoew!!!!

I couldn't hold back the tears, Tyson had to give me water to calm me down.

After that, different people came to give us advice all that...We also did our "Thank you" speeches...There was music and we all danced joyfully... It was just perfect.

Him: should we go back to our room?

Me: Yes please.

Him: but not for you to sleep..you have punishment to take.

Me: No I don't and I'm tired.

Him: wait until we get to the room .

I looked at his big smirk.

Me: Mama D!.

She came our way.

Me: going to bed already?

Her: My feet are killing me.

Me: okey goodnight Mah and thank you so much for being here tonight and for bearing this man for me.

I looked at Tyson.

MamD: You kids deserve nothing but happiness  
I love you too.

We shared hugs.

She attempted going.

Me: ohh Mah, Bongani and I were wondering if  
we could borrow Minnie just for tonight?...we  
really miss her.

He cleared his throat.

MamaD: with pleasure.

I laughed and winked at Tyson.

Him: you time is coming.

I laughed more as I threw myself in his arms.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*32\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

When I woke up in the morning the first thing that took my attention was the second rock on my finger. It gave me assurance that last night was not a dream. I smiled to myself thinking about how good God has been to me, I swear I am grateful for everything he has done.

I looked to my right and saw the sleeping Minnie....Tyson was already up and I don't know where he was.

I got out of the bed and went to take my morning bath and when I returned to the bedroom Tyson was there.

Me: Khumalo.

Him: MaKhumalo.

I wrapped my hands around him and kissed him.

Me: You're up early.

He chuckled.

Him: Your pumpkin sleeps like a real pumpkin...a rootless one.

I laughed.

Him: You know I woke up to her leg on my face.

I laughed more.

Me: stop lying hau.

Him: I'm telling you, I couldn't wait for the night to end so that I can wake up.

Me: I'm Sorry baby.

Him: Yes you should be...because it's all your fault.

I giggled and went out with him following me.

Him: Where are you going?

Me: I need to talk to Uncle A before he leaves..

Him: oh owk..have something to eat first.

He gave me his sandwich....I took one bite and

placed it back.

Me: Thank you.

Him: Palesa ungangihlanyisi (don't drive me crazy) eat!.

I laughed and pulled a chair to sit.

I started eating with him watching me.

Me: Seriously?....so what now, you're worried I'll throw the food away if you're not watching?

Him: Palesa you're capable of anything.

He chuckled and I smile.

Where did I find this man of mine though?.

Me: oh Baby, I've been meaning to ask...how did you find Uncle A and managed to bring him here?.

Him: In some convent in the woods.

Me: Uncle A though.

Him: I didn't know he was a Father, how does he

survive with all those nuns around while he's expected to abstain?

I raised my shoulders and laughed.

Minnie: Tyson can I have ice-cream.

She was wearing my bathrobe...or should I say it was wearing her.

Tyson: It's daddy to you.

Minnie: Tyson.

Tyson: I'll give you hiding.

Minnie: Tyson! Tyson! Tyson! Tyson!.

Tyson stood up and she ran to hide behind me.

Minnie: Candy don't let Tyson hit me.

She was giggling.

Tyson: You're still calling me Tyson?.

I kept on blocking Tyson to protect Minnie and she was busy laughing she even had tears.

Me: Okey Okey! leave her.



Tyson stepped back.

Me: I have to go now.

Minnie: Can I go with you?.

Me: No stay here with Daddy.

Minnie: But Tyson will hit me.

Tyson: Yes I will so you better go with Candy or better yet go back with Uncle A to the church in the woods you'll make a good nun sweetie.

Me: Never.

He laughed.

Me: Come Pumpkin I'll drop you off in Mama D's room.

We walked away with Tyson laughing at us.

I dropped Minnie off and went to Uncle A's room. We talked for a while because he was in a rush to get back to the church but he promised to break the rules a little and keep In touch and that was enough for me so I helped

him pack up.

~

~

[Tyson]

I was chilling with my guys in some bar few walks away from our rooms.

Shakes: Aren't you suppose to be in a honey moon or something?

Me: The Mrs is still deciding where she wants us to go.

Skhu chuckled.

Skhu: Get used to that.

Me: What?

Skhu: the Mrs deciding for everything.

I chuckled

Me: Venus is not like that.

Zach: For now No, but you'll see as time goes by.

Shakes: That why I prefer being single.

Zach: Oh please, there's a difference between being single and being.....Shakes.

We all laughed .

Skhumbuzo tapped on my shoulder.

Skhu: I'm proud of you brother....you did good by putting a ring on it.

Me: Thank you man.

Skhu: But be prepared for the constant tears and drama.

Me: jha that one....

They laughed.

Skhu: I guess it has already started.

Me: You don't know....you know Venus can cry for the sake of crying?.

Skhu: Tell me about it, when Amanda was still carrying Lwazi, She used to cry day in and day out....I remember this one night she cried

because I asked her if she was going to finish her food....she was all like "okey so now you think I eat too much, next thing you'll say I'm fat" ei...you guys don't know the struggle.

We all laughed.

Me: you were asking for it.....don't you know you should never complain about a woman's food scale?.

Zach: In that case then maybe I should slow down on the baby trying issue with Candice.

Skhu: She's still not bargaining?.

Zach nodded.

Me: better let her be....word has it that she is this close to putting a bullet on your head.

Shakes: enough about babies, marriage and wives...someone please tell me something about that whitey who was dropping it like it's hot yersteday.

Zach: That would be Sandy.

Skhu: Oh Rico used to tap that ass.

I gave Skhumbuzo a stare.

Skhu: what? it's true..

Me: Shakes it was nothing trust me...we were just having fun.

Shakes: Exactly what I want..Fun.

We all laughed shaking our heads.

Me: and here I was thinking it's more than that.

Zach: somethings never change.

Skhu: or some people rather.

~

~

[Venus]

The girls were sitting on the floor with their feet hanged, it was not that hilly so I joined them.

Amanda: if it isn't my very own sister in law.

Candice: and it only hits me now that you guys

are practically family and I'm left out.

We laughed.

Me: Don't be like that, give Zach an heir and make me the godmother by that Amanda will be the godaunt...case solved...see? easy we'll be family just like that.

I snapped my fingers.

Amanda: Venus you're crazy.

Candice: and I'm starting to think Zach sent her to convince me about this baby thing.

We all laughed.

Me: You know I'd never do that.

Candice: good because you wouldn't get through me either.

I laughed.

Me: I don't know why you're being so hard on the poor guy.

Candice: I need to make sure that he'll be able

to take care of us first.

Amanda: what are you talking about?...Zach has a good job and a lot of investments I'm sure money is not a problem.

Candice: jea but I also need him to be there for us, I need him to help me raise him or her up...not be a father who's always absent but provides financially... that's not enough for me.

Amanda: strong point there...but you have to tell him that.

Me: yes, nothings hurts like thinking you're not good enough for you partner.

Candice: But I didn't say that.

Amanda: we know you didn't...we're just saying you have to talk to him, tell him what you've just told us.

Candice smiled.

Her: Are you sure you guys were not sent here to convince me?.

Amanda: That's for us to know and for you to find out.

We all laughed.

Me: And Sandy decided to leave early huh?.

Candice: She has a lot of work to catch up on.

Me: that's understandable....but she's a workaholic she needs to slow down a bit...it's not healthy.

Amanda: oh look at you showing some care.

Candice: who would have thought.

We laughed some more .

We continued chilling till it was time for them to go home.

They packed up their luggage and Tyson went with them to see them off.

Meanwhile I took a warm bath and got into my pyjamas and used Tyson's laptop to search for places of interest for my honeymoon.



I must say Tyson took longer than I thought and by the time he came back I was sleeping.

Him: Palesa.

He was softly shaking me.

Him: wake up baby.

Me: You're back finally.

Him: Sorry I took long.

Me: What's wrong Tyson you look worried.

Him: The building in one of the hotels fell down.

Me: What?!.....Is everyone OK?

Him: Yes just minor injuries but we have to go back to RSA....I'm pretty sure reporters will be there first thing in the morning if not already and if they don't see me there they'll make it look like I don't care.

Me: owk...let me start packing.

I stood up and he helped me pack our bags.

He really looked worried.

Me: don't worry baby, I'm sure people managed to get out in time.

He nodded.

Him: I'm sorry, I know we are suppose to be talking about our honey moon.

Me: It's owk...this is an emergency.

He kissed me.

Me: actually Khumalo wami whom I love with my whole heart.

Him: so much love Mrs Khumalo.

I smiled.

Me: I was thinking.....

Him: oh no here comes trouble.

I playfully hit his arm.

Him: I'm joking.

Me: anyway I was thinking that maybe I can

stay behind while you go and take care of  
busin....

He cut me.

Him: No...big NO!.

Me: come on, it's not such a bad idea.

Him: No Rato.

Me: Okey.

I started sobbing thinking he'll feel for me but  
he just laughed.

Him: even in your crocodile tears it's still a No.

I stopped because it wasn't working.

Me: Tyson Please!.

Him: Palesa No!.

I started crying again but this time I made sure  
it looked legit.

Him: okey fine....but only for two days!.

Me: A week.

Him: five days and that's final.

I hugged him.

Me: I love you.

We shared a long kiss before he took off.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*33\*\*\*\*\*

Crop Top

[Venus]

I was watching the same dancing group we saw with Tyson only this time I went there on my own....I met this gorgeous looking lady who was with someone which I assumed was her son....he looked a few years older than Minnie.

Her: You really like the act?.

I guess she noticed by the way I kept moving while watching.

Me: For some reason I feel more close to the culture.

I flashed a smile.

Her: oMosotho?

Me: Yes...half mosotho though.

She laughed.

Her: Well I am full mosotho just that I grew up in a place where Sesotho was not that much around.

Me: I can relate.

My phone rang and it was Tyson,

Me: Excuse me.

She nodded.

I moved away from the noise.

Me: Khumalo.

Him: Hey rato I hear sounds...what's going on?.

I heard cheering sounds as well and I turned back to see what was going on... looked like the new group that just got in is doing a great job.

Me: Horse riding baby...listen I got to go mcwaaah.

I dropped the call and he called a second later.

Me: Palesa unganghlanyisi!?

Him: Palesa unganghlanyisi!

I laughed.

Me: I'm joking baby I'm watching the dancers...but I really have to go.

Him: okey don't do too much activities...you need to rest!.

Me: OK baby I love you.

Him: I love you too.....call me before you go to bed.

Me: OK .

I dropped the call and went back to my show.

It was so much fun I give you that but I also needed some rest so I got back to my room in the evening and took a long bath before I called my husband.

Him: Rato.

Me: sounds like you're the one who's having fun now?

Him: sorry...

He moved to another room and it was less noisy.

Him: I'm chilling with the guys we're watching a game.

Me: You're having fun without me I'm jealous.

He laughed.

Him: Rato you know nothing about soccer and besides you're the one who don't want to come back home.

Me: come on it's only tomorrow then I'm coming the following day....I'm sure you can wait one day more.

Him: But I miss you.

Me: I miss you too.

I heard Zach talking from the background.

Him: Rato I have to go.....we're grabbing a few beers with the guys.

Me: owk have fun don't drink too much.

Him: and you have some rest and kiss my baby boy goodnight.

Me: baby boy?..what if it's a girl?

Him: It's not, Skhumbuzo told me.

Me: What happened to Confidentiality??

Him: I wanted to know.

Me: I didn't....I wanted it to be a surprise and now you ruined....why are you telling me?.



Him: sorry but I couldn't help it.

Me: mcm bye I love you.

He laughed.

Him: I love you.

I dropped the call and read my book for a few minutes then went to bed.

~

~

[Tyson]

We got back from the bar around ten which was not that late.

I needed to rest because I had an early meeting the next day which is part of the reason why I didn't drink much.

I can't say the same about Zach, he was going one glass after another, Candice is really stressing my guy out. As for Skhumbuzo he didn't even touch alcohol....apparently he can't

drink because Lwazi is still young "according to Amanda", she only let him drink at the wedding because it was a special occasion.

Yea right, the women we choose to wife.

Half way through my sleep I received a phone call which I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Rato!!!!!!!!!!!! I'm sleeping.

Her: Tyson, they killed him.

She was crying.

Me: Sandy calm down and tell me what's going on.

Her: They killed my brother Tyson, they shot him and...and he's dead...I will never talk to him again never.

She sobbed loudly.

Me: Okay wait...I'm on my way.

I woke up, wore my track suit and drove off to

Sandy's house..

Few houses away there was a crowd along with the police cars.

It looked like a crime scene.

I also spotted Sandy who was crying endlessly in some woman's shoulder....I got out of the car and went to her.

Me: What happened?

She threw herself in my arms and cried even more.

Her: They....they shot him...he was on his way back from a club and they shot him.

Me: it's owk...let's go before you get sick.

Her: No I have to go with my brother.

Me: there's nothing you can do for him anymore....he's gone....please come.

I pulled her hand and we went inside her house.

Me: Where do you keep your teabags?

She pointed on a drawer and I took it out and made her tea.

It was starting to get darker outside meaning it was about to dawn.

I gave her the cup, she took it and held it close while staring at the space.

Her: I know he did a lot of bad things but he was only seventeen he didn't deserve to die.....not like that.

I sat next to her and held her close, trying to comfort her.

Me: shiii it's okey....don't cry.

Her: you know what he said when I fetched him from the juvenile?... "I'm going to change, go back to school and make something of my life"...that's what he said.

Sandy's brother was involved in wrong doings and he was caught with lots of drugs which led to his arrest.

Me: shiii.

That's all I could say, "shiii", I didn't know how to make her stop crying.

She stopped and looked at me.

She leaned for a kiss and I moved back.

Me: Sandy I'm married.

She closed her eyes and faced the roof.

Her: please.

Me: sex is not going to bring him back.

Her: I just want to forget, even if it's for a little while.....please help me forget.

She leaned for a kiss again and this time I didnt move back.

I wish I can say I didn't sleep with her but I did and I regret every minute of it.

The sun was about to come out so I decided to drive back home. Not much words were exchanged. That's how much we both regretted

what we've just did.

I got home and opened the door only to find Venus standing by the counter with a glass of water in her right hand, looking gorgeous in her pregnant self.

Her: It must have been real fun for you to come back today.

Me: Rato?...you're back.

Her: you almost sound disappointed.

I chuckled.

She came and wrapped her hands around my neck.

I gently moved her aside and went towards the kitchen when she tried to kiss me.

Her: you were begging me to come home and now that I'm here you don't want me?

I faked a smile.

Me: you know that's not true.

Her: is it?...who are you hiding in my house?...Hey Whoever you are come out!.

She was shouting jokingly.

Me: Baby you're crazy.

Was she?...I know there was no one in the house but I've just had sex with the same girl I told her not to worry about...I really messed up.

Her: Hangover?

I nodded because it was my only excuse for her to leave me.

Her: okey baby go take a shower while I make you something to eat okey?.

Venus has always been a sweet heart but it was like she was over doing it that morning or maybe it was my conscience playing with me?.

Her: not even a thank you kiss nyana nje?

Me: I smell like a bar baby...you'll get it after I've showered and washed my mouth.

Her: jea right.

I quickly walked out before I say or do what I'm not supposed to do....not that I haven't done that already with Sandy...

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*34\*\*\*\*\*

[Candice]

I got home from work in a very tired state and thank goodness Zach was not home yet because in honest truth I'm just about tired of fighting with him.

I want babies as much as he does and I know if I was in his shoes I'd also fight for my partner to agree, however with that said, Zach is not doing it the right way.



He can't come home drunk almost every time he goes out and expect me to rule him fit enough to be a father...Hell No!.

I got to our bedroom and changed into comfortable shoes, push-ins to be specific and went to start cooking.

Half way through that Zach walked in, well at least he's not drunk so no need to yell at him.

Him: Hey.

Me: Hi.

He kissed my cheek and went towards the bedroom.

I could tell he's tired so why not let him be....He needs me as his wife right now not his enemy.

I slowly walked inside the bedroom and he looked at me with begging eyes.

Me: the script marking is straining you huh?.

Him: You don't know.....maybe it about time I

take an early retirement.

I walked to the side drawer and took out rubbing cream.

Me: take your shirt off.

He looked at me astonished.

Me: hurry up Mr before I change my mind.

He flashed a side smile and took off his shirt. I started doing magic with my hands on his back.

Me: OK, that's better.

Him: and now I feel like sleeping.

Me: Don't fall asleep before eating Zach Ngubane!.

He chuckled and I walked out to dish for him, When I got back to the room with his food he was busy on his laptop.

Me: We don't bring work to the bedroom.

He put the laptop away and folds his hands.

Him: And we also don't bring food here.

Me: But you still make me breakfast in bed?.

Him: and you love it.

Me: Well look at this as Supper in bed, I'll compromise just this once and besides I'm trying to spoil you why are you being smart vele?.

He laughed.

Him: Thank you baby.

He starts eating and I just look at him.

He really is trying to make this work and maybe having a baby is exactly what we need.

Him: baby. I'm sorry I've been an ass these few days.....I promise it stops now okey?.

Me: I love you.

I kissed his forehead and went to take a shower.

It's not even seven o'clock but we might as well sleep early because we're both tired.

I got back from the shower and wore my pyjamas. I know I'm tired but I can spare few minutes to finish reading my book.

I went through my drawer and noticed that my pills are missing.

Me: Zach.

He was sleeping.

Me: Zach!

Him: mhh.

Me: have you seen my pills?.

Him: what pills.

He looked at me.

Him: contraceptives?....I through them away.

Me: you what?....what business did you have with them? they are mine!.

He ignored me and went back to sleep and in that instant I felt like going through his drawer, get his gun and shoot him dead.

I clicked my tongue and actually it sounds like a good idea.

I know I was angry but him ignoring me was like pouring petrol to an already burning fire.

I went to his side drawer, took his gun out and clocked it.

Me: Zach!...My pills.

Him: Candice you're being crazy right now.....

Me: ohhh so I'm crazy.

I didnt point the gun at him though, I was swinging it around and this crazy man was not scared.

I threw the gun next him and went out to cry.

All the thoughts of actually compromising and agreeing to this baby thing were flashed outside the window.

~

~

[Tyson]

I received a call from Skhumbuzo telling me he's coming here and judging by his attitude on the phone he knows what I've just did.

Venus: Baby can you get the door?

She was in the shower.

Me: That must be Skhumbuzo, Rato I'm gone.

Her: okey baby, I love you.

"I love you"....those words from her hit deep to my already provoking conscience. I really don't deserve her now do I?...I know I can never erase what I've just done and I don't want to justify it and say I didn't know because I did...this whole thing is just so messed up.

Her: Tyson?.

I snapped out of my thoughts.

Me: lock up baby.

I walked out and Skhumbuzo was now waiting

inside his car.

I got in and we drove in silence.

He pulled over and stopped in the middle of nowhere.

Him: what the fuck Tyson?.

Me: Before you go all crazy I regret it already.

Him: You know she's going to leave you right?.

Me: I know...my worse fear is slowly creeping on me.

Him: did it have to be Sandy though? ..you know she didn't like her in the first place.

Me: Skhumbuzo this is for you to track my moves when it's only necessary.

Him: well I wouldn't have tracked it if Venus didn't call Amanda asking when you're coming home because apparently you slept at my place meanwhile you're busy with Sandy.

He clicked his tongue.

Me: okey point taken.

Him: Fix this Tyson, Venus can never hear about this...she don't need the stress.

Me: I'm working on it.

Him: and Sandy needs to go.

Me: Like I said I'm working on it.

He looked at me and shock his head...

He was disappointed in me but not as much as I was disappointed in myself.

We drove back to my house and he parked outside.

Him: Listen I'm not trying to judge you okey?.

Me: Skhumbuzo what happened was not a mistake, I was sober.

Him: I get it, I know she helped you when Minnie's mother passed on...and maybe you thought you are returning the favour but Tyson you just got married...don't ruin a good thing.



I looked him.

Him: and don't be too hard on yourself...we all make mistakes...I just hope you learnt from it.

Me: Thank you man.

We fist bumped and he took off.

Skhumbuzo was right, I've been beating myself up about this in such a way that I neglected my wife...

I can't do her wrong and let her suffer too.

Next day I went to the office, I needed to talk to Sandy. Luckily she also agreed with me that what happened should never happen again and she agreed to looking for another job of which I know won't be hard with her good work records.

Anyways I was watching a movie with Venus, I decided to spend more time with her.

I know it won't change anything but hey.

Me: Are you crying?

Ladies and their Rom-com.

Her: This is so sad.

Me: And very predictable.

She rolled her eyes.

Me: I'm telling you, it's always the same storyline...boy meets girl..they break up and make up...and live happily ever after!!

Her: well this is different...there's no happily ever after.

Me: that's because the girl went away...who knows maybe in part two they meet again.

She laughed...

And you see that smile right there?...It's the best I ever came across.

Her: there's no such thing, the girl left because the guy didn't want to commit.

Him: that's because he was scared the girl would say no.

Her: Well that's the problem right there...you guys like deciding for us...why not lay the cards on the table and let us decide.

Me: that's what you want?

Her: of course yes...I want the truth in that way I'd be able to deal with it best way I know how.

She smiled.

Only if she knew how much changes her words are building inside me.

Maybe I should give her the truth and let her decide. But then again what if she decides to leave me?...I can't risk that.

Her: Mama D said she won't make it on Christmas day.

Me: yes she told me.

She stood up.

Her: I'm going to bed...are you coming?

Me: Right behind you.

She flashed a smile.

~

~

[Venus]

Christmas and new year's eve came and passed. It was now back to school and back to work to most of the people.

I was five months and two weeks pregnant. Skhumbuzo was very happy as my doctor....I was doing really good. Well I had no choice because Mamzo and Tyson made it their priority that I get enough rest, I am truly blessed to have Bongani as my husband.

I was sitting with Candice at McDonald's.

I couldn't stop laughing at the stories she was telling me.

Me: But I still think you're toying with Zach.

Her: No I'm not, he should just respect my

space.

I laughed more.

Amanda: what's funny?

She asked as she sat down.

Candice: you're late as usual.

Amanda: Festive season is not over to some people so it's more work to us....the hospital is a mess as we speak plus we're short stuffed.

Me: Blame your brother and your husband.

She chuckled and took the menu.

Amanda: so what's funny?

Me: Candice is messing with Zach.

Amanda: oh this one....the lightning that will strike her is still drinking tea with Koko Mantsha and wallet from skeem saam in Limpompo.

She said that really fast and I couldnt stop laughing.

Candice rolled her eyes.

Amanda: you're evil Candice .

Her: You know weeks back I was ready to give it a chance then he threw my pills.

I could tell that made her angry just by the way she's saying it.

Amanda: I thought you were looking for them so you can throw them out?.

Candice: that's true.

Me: it doesnt end there, she bought new pills.

Amanda: What for?

Me: She takes one and flush it down the toilet everyday so that Zach can think she's still using.

Amanda: I give up.

Candice drank her wine giving Amanda no attention.

Amanda: anyway, how far are you with the catering?

Oh in two days it's Tyson's birthday.

My handsome husband is turning 31 and we decided to throw him a party.

Me: we're all good to go on that part.

Amanda: drinks?

Candice: check.

Amanda: owk what's left now is, I don't know what I will get for him.

Me: That's makes the two of us, he practically have everything but I'll try searching him.

We finished our meal and went separate ways.

I found Tyson watching TV at the dining room. I put my bag down and sat on top of him.

Him: hey beautiful.

Me: baby.

I leaned for a kiss.

Me: okey baby I have some questions...if you

had one wish what would you wish for?

Him: I'd wish for a forever with you.

Me: emm let's say someone want to buy you something, what would it be?.

Him: you want to buy me a birthday gift?

Me: No!!!

He laughed.

Him: I'm sure the surprise party is enough for a present.

I playfully hit him.

Me: how did you know?

He chuckled and he moved me from him.

Him: you can't plan a party in my house and expects me not to know.

Me: Amanda won't like this.

I said as I followed him to our room.

Him: don't worry I'll act surprised.



I chuckled.

Me: Can I join you?.

He was about to take a shower.

He looked at me and pulled me closer.

An innocent shower turned into moans and groans along with us calling each others names as we came.

After that we let the water hit our body and we got out with him carrying me back to our bedroom.

He helped me lotion my body and sat next to me

Me: What's wrong?

Him: You're just too perfect and I dont want to lose you.

Me: you won't lose me.

Him: you don't understand Venus I messed up.

I swear I saw tears.

Me: Hey hey....

I cupped his face.

Me: Whatever it is we'll work it out okey?....We'll work it out together.

He nodded and I gave him a tight hug.

Me: I love you.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*35\*\*\*\*\*

....Crop Top....

[Venus]

The first thing I saw when I woke up was  
Tyson's eyes staring at me. He had his elbow  
balanced on the pillow.

Me: Morning baby.

Him: good morning, look what I got for you?.

He leaned to his side and picked the cup next to him.

I sat up and rubbed my eyes.

Me: Really?...please don't play like that.

Him: I'm not...here take it.

Me: you're letting me drink coffee?...you know I'm going to tell Skhumbuzo right?.

Him: woman just take it already.

I took it and put the cup close to my mouth, attempting to drink it. The smell was so divine. I slowly breath out.

Him: It's caffeine free...

I didn't even wait for him to finish his sentence I had already gulp on the drink.

Me: Not bad but it's still not coffee..

He looked at me.

Me: but it's the closest thing to it so thank you baby.

He kissed my cheek.

Me: So....are you excited?

Him: I'm thirty one Palesa.

Me: That's no reason not to celebrate.

Him: We are to celebrate.

Me: Yes the least you could do is be excited about it.

Him: ok here.

He flashed a wide smile and I couldn't help but laugh because he looked like a clown.

Me: stop it.

I playfully pushed him and he laughed.

Him: but honestly I am happy, I may not show it as much as I want to but I am happy.

Me: then I'm just as happy.

I kissed him then went to take my morning bath.

It's a nice day ahead and I just couldn't wait  
you'd swear it's my birthday celebration .

After I finished bathing I went to the lounge to  
help Mamzo move the couches around but she  
already had help when I got there.

Tyson's phone rang on the counter.

Me: Baby your phone is ringing.

Him: who is it.

Me: MamaD....hello Mama you're on loud  
speaker.

Minnie: Happy birthday to you Happy birthday to  
you...Happy birthday dear Tyson....

Tyson: it's Daddy to you.

I laughed.

Me: shush!

Minnie: Happy birthday to you!!!.

MamaD: Hip hip.

Minnie: Hooray!.

She giggled

Me: Ncoew that's so sweet.

Tyson came and took the phone.

Him: Thank you Princess I love you.

I'm begining to think having nice voices runs in the family. I mean I can tell by now that Minnie can make a great singer.

Anyways the preparations were going so well. Amanda and Skhumbuzo came in early to give us a hand. Later on the rest of the guest arrived...well mostly it was Tyson's gang members but I'm glad they came with their spouses otherwise the party would have been saturated with males.

We were sitting at the gazebo having drinks with me obviously drinking an apple juice and the ladies drinking wine , Candice introduced us

to some gangsters wives. It a good thing she knew them other wise we would have been sitting in awful silence with me mostly talking to Candice and Amanda but thankfully that was not the case.

Tyson was really enjoying himself chatting with the guys and I couldn't stop staring.

Amanda: enough already...he's yours we get it.

I laughed.

Me: it's crazy because I know he's mine but I still can't help it.

Candice: jea jea.

I laughed and brushed my belly.

Amanda: Look who's here?.

I looked up and saw Sandy.

Me: Finally.

I stood up and hugged her.

Her: You didn't tell me the time of the party and

it looks like I'm a little too late.

Me: oh my bad....come here sit down.

She sat down, Amanda offered her a drink but she insisted she was OK.

Sandy: So what did I miss?.

Amanda: Where have you been, you just disappeared nje...?

Sandy: I needed to deal with some stuff hey.

Me: I'm sorry about your brother...Tyson told me.

Her: He did?.

Me: yes I came looking for you at work and he told me that you've just lost your brother and you need some time off.

Her: yes that's true.

Me: okey enough about this, I'll go ask the catering ladies to dish up for you.

She nodded and I stood up.



~

~

[Tyson]

I was really having fun, everything was going so well until Sandy made appearance.

Skhu: Tyson!.

He called me to the side.

Him: What is she doing here?

Me: I don't know I told her to stay away.

We saw Venus making her way towards us.

Me: Rato.

Her: Mr party.

I semi-smiled.

Me: I see Sandy is here.

Her: yes baby I invited her, listen I have to go dish up for her mcwaaah.

She gave me a baby kiss and walked away.

I looked at Skhumbuzo.

Me: I'll talk to her.

Skhumbuzo shock his head.

I went over to where they were sitting.

Me: Ladies...can I borrow Sandy for a few.

Amanda: No Tyson this is no time to be talking work.

Me: just a few minutes.

Amanda: whatever!

Sandy stood up and followed me inside the house.

Me: What are doing here?.

Her: Your wife invited me....

Me: You should have said No..you can't be here you have to go.

Her: Don't you think I tried that?.

Me: if that's the case you wouldn't be here.

Her: Venus is persistent and you know it ....and besides I needed to talk to you.

Me: well I don't want to talk to you.

Then she dropped the bomb!.

Her: I think I'm pregnant.

Me: What?!

Her: you heard me.

Me: what happened to taking injections?

Her: I had stopped sleeping with you and I have no boyfriend so I saw no need and stopped.

Me: Fuck!.

I brushed my head.

Me: you said you think so there's a possibility that you're not pregnant?.

Her: I missed my time and I did home pregnancy test.

Me: and?.

Her: The first two came negative, third one is positive and the forth is neutral.

Me: why would you continue testing if the two had already said negative?

Her: I needed to be sure.

Me: jea right.

I paced around.

Her: I can't go to the hospital there's too many eyes and ears.

Me: so what now?.

Her: it's your baby as well so you tell me.

Venus: what baby?

I turned and our eyes met.

She was standing by the steps with a plate full of food in her hands.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:  
Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*36\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

For a moment there I thought maybe they'll say " We got you" but I waited and waited, Nothing. My husband cheated on me, my Tyson...and he didn't cheat with just some girl from the streets but he cheated on me with Sandy...Sandy?!.

I don't even know how or when but the plate was already on the floor.

Me: Get out of my house!.

I wasn't shouting and I wasn't angry, No. I was just one woman who's heart was broken into pieces a woman who felt betrayed by the world itself and as much as I wanted to be angry my emotions wouldn't let me, I tried but all I managed to do was speak in a very low voice, it was so low you'd think I didn't utter any words.

Sandy: Venus please it was a mistake we...

Me: out of my house!...Tyson?.

Tyson: Sandy just go.

She turned back with guilt all over her face  
you'd swear she's the one who've been wronged.

Me: Was it in my house?

Tyson: No it wasn't.

Me: Couldn't you at least condomise Tyson?,  
did you even think about me?

Him: Rato...

Me: Don't Rato Me!....

Tears just streamed down with no mercy on my  
cheeks.

Me: Am I not enough for you Tyson?

Him: Baby you are...I'm sorry...

Me: Don't be....I trusted you I'm the sorry one  
here.

Him: Baby please calm down.

Me: when was it?...was it everytime she came here for our girls outing?..was it when you had those late night brainstorming meetings?..

Him: It really doesn't matter Venus look...

Me: When Tyson?

Him: the time you were in Lesotho.

He looked down and I felt a huge knock to my already broken heart. I couldn't speak due to my sobbing.

Me: Just....just after you stood in front of the pastor and swore to fidelity?..Tyson.

I couldn't believe he did this to me, how could he?....he promised me.

Me: ahh!.

Him: Rato.

I yanked his hand off as I sat to balance on the steps...

Me: don't touch me!.....ahh!.

I felt sharp pain on my abdominal area, it was so sharp you'd swear someone peeled my uterus with a knife.

Him: Baby you're bleeding.

I looked at my thighs and indeed I was bleeding.

Him: Skhumbuzo!

He attempted going out but turned as I screamed in agony.

He picked me up and ran with me to his car.

Amanda: what's going on?

That's all I remember the next thing I woke up in a hospital bed with Skhumbuzo standing with a needle in front of me.

I could see it in his eyes how sorry he felt for me, I felt sorry for myself too but was that going to help me?...I doubt it.

Me: Skhumbuzo?.



Him: I'm sorry Venus I tried but....it was too late.

I looked to the other side and saw Tyson by the door....He couldn't even look me in the eye.

I still couldn't scream, shout or cry loud...I was so tired even my soul was weighing me.

I just sat still as the nurses came to clean me and when they were done Amanda gave me a light grey track suit which I wore as Skhumbuzo drove us back home...Tyson was not in the car and he was the least of my worries.

Me: Amanda.

She looked at me with watery eyes.

Me: I need to be alone okey.

I didn't even wait for her to respond I just climbed the stairs with my abdominal still screaming in pain but no matter how painful it was it couldn't compare to the pain I was feeling inside...

I got to my room and closed the door. I didn't

lock it though because I didn't know what was to happen and I wouldn't want to rot in here just in case something happens.

Me: God?...I did everything right....I went to church every Sunday, paid my tithes...I forgave everyone that sinned me and there was not even one day I went to bed without glorifying you....don't I deserve happiness too?....will I ever find it or it will always be shortlived?...I need you to tell me why...why me?....do you hate me that much?.

Who was I kidding?...I was just wasting my tears and time.

~

~

[Amanda]

The minute Tyson got in I was all up in his face.

Me: How could you do this Tyson?.

I pushed his chest.

Him: Amanda please not now.

Me: when then huh?....why can't you be a good husband for once and stop hoering around?.

Skhu: Amanda that's enough.

Me: Shut up Skhumbuzo I'm not talking to you.....are you happy now?...huh Tyson?

Skhumbuzo pulled me away from Tyson.

Skhu: Stop it okey....you're not helping!.

He spook with so much authority I just looked at him and walked over Venus's room.

I slowly opened the door and she didn't give me any attention...She was just staring into space and rocking herself back and forth....she had her knees all hugged up and her chin rest on them.

I slowly walked in and she was humming some song in between her sniffing.

Me: Venus?

She continued humming ignoring me.

Me: Do you need something?...food?...water anything?

What was I saying?...she's just lost her baby food is the last thing on her mind.

Her: mhh mhh ahm.

I stopped to think for a second before attempting to walk out, I thought maybe she needs her space.

Me: I...

I looked at her.

Her: Amanda.....remember the time Lwazi was restless?.

I knelt down next to her.

Me: yes I do remember.

Her:You would sing to him and I remember I said.....you have a nice voice.

She looked at me and smiled with tears on her

face.....I also gave out a faint smile.

Her: Please sing that song to me.

Me: Venus don't do this.

I was also struggling to hold my tears.

Her: Amanda please.

She gave me the begging eyes.

I cleared my throat.

Me: Thula thula Nana thula sana!.....

Her: continue.

I was reluctant because the more I sang the more she cried.

Me: Thul'umama uzobuya ekseni!

(Hush little baby don't cry Mommy will come in the morning?.

She started humming along as I sang to her in my arms.

Me: Thula!.....

I stopped and looked at her.

She'd wipe her tears and continue humming as if she wasn't crying.

Me: Sorry I can't do this.

I quickly stood up to wipe my tears. I bumped into Mamzo...

Her: Child...mhh askies baby.

I tried to run away from her hug because I knew it will make it worse but she just held me tight.

I know I've never lost a child and maybe I don't know how it feels but what I know is that Venus doesn't deserve this not even my worse enemy does.

Her: Where is she?.

I pointed at the door and she walked in with me standing by the door way looking at her.

Mamzo: Venus.....swretheart look at me.

Venus: Mamzo.

She faced up to look at her.

She wiped the tears with the back of her hand.

Mamzo: I'm sorry.

Those words just made Venus sob loudly and Mamzo held her to her chest.

Her: It's painful Mah.....I can't....I can't do this I can't I can't...

She kept on repeating those words between her sobbing and I couldn't watch anymore.....I've seen women lose babies before at the hospital but if has never broke my heart like today.

I walked back to the lounge.

Skhu: Look at me....brother look.

He was talking to Tyson who was now sitting down with his face balanced in his hands.

Skhu: Don't hold back Tyson just do it.

Tyson shock his head No.

Skhu: Don't do this.

In that instant we heard Venus sobbing loudly.  
Tyson rubbed his head....Venus's sob tore him apart.

He started sniffing and Skhumbuzo put his hands on his shoulders

Skhu: Tys...

He couldn't even finish his sentence Tyson just sobbed loudly...he didn't utter any words he just cried.

Maybe I was too harsh on him, it was his son as well...I'm sure it meant so much to him just as it did to Venus.... he have his mistakes just like I have mine.

Me: excuse me.

I moved Skhumbuzo aside and made Tyson stand up, He just looked at me with red eyes.

I wrapped my hands around him as he cried more.



I might be angry at him and Lord I am angry but he's still my brother and I love him.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*37\*\*\*\*\*

[Skhumbuzo]

I was at the office with Amanda, she came to fetch some documents. Well I was on duty so I couldn't go with her to Venus's house as yet.

Her: Baby.

Me: Dr Shezi.

I pulled her close while I leaned to the table.

She let out a sigh.

Her: you know baby, I've never seen him so devastated.

Me: me too and I'm starting to worry about him.

Her: and Venus is not having it any less...even Mamzo don't know what to do anymore.

Me: I thought she was getting better?.

She frowned.

Her: I thought so too but she just had another breakdown again....Mamzo says she hasn't been out of that room ever since this whole thing.

This was also affecting Amanda in way, I'd here her sob at night sometimes...she's really fond of her sister in law.

Me: I was thinking that maybe you should spend the night there, I'll ask the nanny to look after Lwazi.....

Her: That's a good idea...I also called Mama D she promised to get here in the early hours tomorrow.

I kissed her cheek.

Her: I should go now.

Me: I'll walk you out.

I held her hand in mine and accompanied her to the parking lot.

Me: I'll see you around noon.

Her: OK baby I love you.

Me: I love you too.

She took off and I turned to walk back in. Then I saw this lady with her face covered with a scarf, I was curious so I walked closer and she increased her pace. I couldn't stop but wonder so I ran after her.

She quickly got in her car and that's when I realised it was Sandy.

I got inside my car and followed her to her house....She tried to close the door in my face but I was fast.

Her: Skhumbuzo....Hi!.

She said my name with an accent.

She was literally shaking as I took my gun out.

Her: Please don't kill me!.

Me: What were you doing at the hospital?.

Her: I came to visit.. emm to visit a..a friend.

She was stuttering.

Me: Really?.

I clocked my gun.

Me: Try again....I want the truth this time.

Her: okey... okey...I wanted to do a...a pregnancy test.

Me: there are so many hospitals around...why choose that one....what are you up to?

Her: Nothing I swear...Nothing...It's the place Tyson would expect me to be so that's why I went there.

Me: okey fair enough...now explain why you

were running away from me?.

Her: I....the results.....they came back negative.

I so badly wanted to knock her with the gun,  
that's how angry I was.

Me: Do you have any idea what you've just  
done?.

Her: What?.

I took the card from her and put my gun away.

Me: If I were you I'd be on the run as we speak  
because Tyson is going to kill you when he  
finds out about this.

I got out and took off.

I can't believe Venus had to lose her baby for a  
mere hypothesis.

~

~

[Tyson]

I've done did a lot of bad things in my life and I'm not one to dwell in mistakes and be overpowered by regrets but this time around....I don't know.

I can't even sleep at night. Every time I close my eyes all I picture is Venus's face....not the pretty one with smiles and dimples and all that but the one she gave me the time Skhumbuzo announced the news to her.

And no matter how hard I try I can't get her loud sobs out of my mind....they are a constant reminder that I failed...I failed her as my wife and I failed my unborn child too.

Skhu: Tyson?.

Me: Hey.

Him: Here?.

He gave me some card.

Me: What's this?

Him: Docter's report card....Sandy is not

pregnant.

I put the card on the side.

I didn't even look at it....I was a little relieved to learn that Sandy is not pregnant but It still didn't change the fact that I slept with her and it's the cause of me losing my unborn son.

Skhu: Hang in there man.

I just nodded and looked away.

~

~

[Venus]

I opened my eyes in the morning to learn that I'm still alive. It's been a whole week and still the pain feels the same if not worse...Time heals they say huh?...I guess i'm gonna need a lifetime because this....this pain doesn't compare to any pain that I've ever felt...and sometimes I feel like miscarrying before was not as painful.

I so wish Tyson was here next to me, He's the only person who could understand what I need but then again he failed me....He tore me apart.

I woke up and went to take my morning bath, After that I tidied around the room and went to bed to cry some more.

That's all I managed to do, cry.

Voice: Candy!.

I turned to see her by the door wearing pink fluffy skirt and a long sleeved white top.

Me: Pumpkin.

She came and sat next ontop of me.

Her: Are you crying?

I wiped my tears with the back of my hand.

Me: No...something got inside my eyes.

She wrapped her small arms around my neck and that alone made me emotional.

MamaD: Minnie Mamzo is calling you.



I sniffed and looked at MamaD as she walked in.

Minnie kissed my cheek and walked out.

MamaD: Girl friend.

I smiled with tears still roaming.

Me: Mah.

She hugged me then went over to open the curtain.

Me: MamaD!!!!!!!!!!

She chuckled.

The light was so bright I had to cover my eyes.  
She came and sat down next to me.

Her: How are you?

Me: I'll get there.. I know I will.

She held my hands.

Her: I'm glad you know.....Amanda told me about Tyson and that white girl.

That's one topic I didnt want to touch.

Her: He's my son and I'm not trying to defend him but he's hurting...He knows that this is his fault.

Me: I don't....

I sighed.

Me: I don't blame him for the miscarriage I'm just hurt that he wasn't faithful to me.

Her: You know his father was worse, he'd go around sleeping with a whole bunch of girls....and in our days you couldn't confront your man about such, it was seen as disrespect.....so I dealt with situation the best way I know how.

Me: What's that?

Her: I beat the shit out of them girls.

I laughed as she continued telling me her silly stories.

Her: What I'm saying is you need to decide if you still want him, if you do make sure you

punish him and if you don't I won't hold it against you....I'm sure he won't either.

I let out a sigh.

Her: you don't have to decide now.

Me: that's better.

She laughed.

Her: let's take a walk and let the sun hit that beautiful skin of yours.

I flashed a smile.

Me: Why not?.

I really adore MamaD she has that motherly warmth in her and I liked every part of it.

I changed into body tight hipster pants and I know Tyson won't like that because they are the closest thing to leggings. I took his track jacket from the closet and wore it, my belly was not yet into sharp and the jacket was big which was good because I needed to hide all that extra.

We walked into the lounge with MamaD leading the way...My eyes met Tyson's.

I haven't seen him for a week and Lord I missed him but nevertheless I walked out giving him no attention.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*38\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

A week later I was.....I don't want to say better because I wasn't, I just learnt to cope with the pain. During the day I managed to smile at least thrice but at night, it's when all the thoughts came....I'd have dreams where I'm holding my baby boy and as soon as I wake up I'd cry.

Nevertheless as days went by I was getting better.

I woke up in the morning and got ready for my morning jog, not only did it help me cope with the pain by clearing my mind but it also helped me get back into sharp.

I walked past the kitchen and they were having breakfast.

Me: Morning family.

MamaD: Morning friend.

I chuckled and looked at Tyson and he looked away.

On any other day he'd be on my throat for wearing leggings but since I'm giving him the silent treatment he has no choice but to let me be.

Minnie: can I come with you today?

Me: No pumpkin finish eating.

Her: But yersteday you said that I'll come with you today.

Me: Yes baby but you can't jog now you've already started eating.

I went for the door and she followed me with her hands on her waist.

Her: no one will know that i've eaten already... I won't tell if you don't..

I looked at Mamzo and she was laughing.

I squated before her.

Me: Your body will know pumpkin and you can't do that just after you've eaten it's not right.

Her: okey but tomorrow I'm coming with you.

Me: OK baby...

We high fived and I walked out.

Jogging really cleared my mind and today I went really far so on my way back home I was tired and I decided to walk instead.

Him: tired already?.

He came jogging and stopped next to me.

I gave him a look and looked away ignoring him.

Him: ouch! OK....I'm Thobani by the way?

He gave me his hand to shake, I looked at it for a while before shaking it.

Him: I didn't get your name?

Me: that's because I didn't give it to you.

Him: OK atleast I now know you can talk.

Me: Whatever!.

I started walking.

Him: We should hang out sometime, go out maybe?

Me: No we shouldn't.

Him: do you have a reason?.

He was starting to annoy me so I turned to look at him but something caught my attention. It was DK in a black car, he had the windows down so I saw him clearly..I shifted attention back to the guy.

Me: because I'm married.

Him: Happily married?

He was playing smart with me so I started walking again... He annoyed me more with that question.

Him: okey but what sane man lets his beautiful wife walk alone in the streets.

Me: You'd be surprise to learn that I'm not alone.  
I saw DK's car approaching.

Me: even the air have eyes and ears nowadays....?

Him: Thobani.

Me: Thobani.

DK: everything OK?.

Me: I don't know everything okey Thobani?

Him: yes everything is fine.

Me:Good then.



DK opened the door for me and I got in and he drove me home.

Me: Why are you following me DK?

He chuckled.

Him: I'm not we just happened to be in a same place at the same time.

Me: yeah right.

He chuckled.

Me: anyways thank you for the ride home.

Him: pleasure.

I got out and walked inside the house.

I know Tyson put him up to this and he has a lot of explanation to do but for now I need my shower..

I walked past the lounge and there was no one so I walked straight to my bedroom.

I took off my clothes and wrapped a towel around my body.

I got the shock of my life when I saw Tyson in the bathroom shaving his face, He hasn't been using this bathroom ever since he moved to the other bedroom.

Him: sorry, I didn't know you'd be back so soon.

All I did was concentrate on him, it was so frustrating that I couldn't even stay mad at him for too long..I just couldn't.

He took his after shave cream and walked out.

Me: I think what you're suppose to be saying is "Rato I'll do anything to show you how sorry I am".

I smiled and he chuckled....after that we both kept quite.

Me: I'm waiting.

Him: you're serious?

Me: like a heart attack.

Him: mh Rato I'll do anything to show you how

sorry I am..

Me: Well I'm glad you said that because I was thinking that it's time I had my own separate walk in closet and I want it to be exactly here..

I said while pointing with my hands.

Me: and it should have a section for shoes....like on this side.. shoes that you will buy for me.

He chuckled.

Him: OK but this room is not big enough for another walk in closet...especially one with a shoe section.

Me: I figured you'd say that so I was thinking that maybe we can knock down this wall.

I said while touching the wall and he was standing behind me.

Me: it could extend to the room next door but the door will be here.

I turned and he was looking at me smiling.

Me: what?.

Him: I love you Palesa I really do and I'm sorry I did what I did, I'm sorry we had to lose our son in the process.

Me: That's the way God planned it, we might not like it but.

I sighed.

Me: It's what he wants.....let me go shower.

I kissed his cheek and walked out.

After I finished I lotioned my body, I wore a blue boyfriend jeans, a white long sleeved plain top and blue sweater hills....I tidied my hair into a messy bun and put on some make- up.

I went to the kitchen and ate my breakfast.

Me: look at you.

She giggled.

Her: MamaD bought for me.

She was wearing a fairy pink dress.

Me: it's beautiful, you know what we should go out .

Her: yeeey!

She span around with her dress spinning too.

Tyson: Minenhle watch out!.

She stopped spinning and stood inbetween my legs with her elbows on my thighs.

Him: what's so exciting?

Me: Minnie and I are going shopping.

Him: oh owk.

I stood up and went towards him.

Me: actually we need your card.

He looked at me with a smile, I got my hand out signaling him to give me the card.

Him: which one.

He asked as he took out his wallet.

Me: this one thank you.

I gave him a baby kiss.

MamaD: Girl friend?!!.

Me: Mah you gave me a fright.

Her: What happened to punishing him?.

I spoke while looking at Tyson.

Me: I think he's learnt his lesson.

Her: I give up!

She clapped once and I smiled.

Me: Pumpkin let's go.

Her: Candy your handbag?

Me: Oh I forgot.

I went upstairs and fetched my bag then we took off.

We did a lot of shopping from clothes to accessories and handbags then after we went to watch a movie before we sat down for a meal.

Me: finish up pumpkin so we can go home it's getting late.

It was starting to get dark.

Her: Mommy?.

Me: yes pumpkin.

She finished swallowing.

Her: I don't want to go back to the farms.

Me: why?.

Her: It's always raining we can't play outside.

I laughed.

Me: always?

Her: okey not always but most of the time and the goat ate my favorite skirt.

Me: Really?.

Her: Yes, it was on the line and Anele said he's going back to school because the goat ate his shirt too.

I felt her sadness but I couldn't stop laughing.

Her: so I want to go to Anele's school as well so I can live there.

Me: But Anele is in varsity.

Her: I want to go there too.

Me: sweetie you're six years old...still too young for varsity.

She looked disappointed.

Me: But I'll talk to daddy and ask him not to take you back to the farms.

Her: thank you mommy.

Me: OK baby, wait here while I go fetch the take aways.

She nodded and I went to pay and we went home.

Me: a little help.

Mamzo came and helped us with the shopping after we got everything from the car I started



giving them their gifts.

Me: This is so you.

Mamzo: A wrist watch?..it's so beautiful and it looks expensive.

Me: plus it's water proofed so you don't have to worry about taking it off when washing the dishes and all that.

Her: I love it.

Me: And this is for you.

Well I couldn't get MamaD a wrist watch because her son bought her an even expensive one so I bought her a neckles and she loooved it.

Tyson was looking at us all smiley.

Me: I got this for Lwazi, it's a music box....it plays lulabys so I hope he likes it.

MamaD: I'm sure he will.

I took my bags upstairs and took a quick

shower.....Minnie was sleeping and I was not surprised with all the shopping we did I was tired to so I decided to have any early night.

Tired as I was I was struggling to fall asleep so I decided to go to the room Tyson was using. I knocked once and got in. He was fixing the pillows.

Him: Rato.

Me: ka Tyson.

He smiled.

Me: I thought you'd sleep in our bedroom tonight or maybe this is your way of saying no to my walk in closet?

He chuckled.

Him: How are you?

Me: Me?

that's was unexpected.

Me: I'm coping.....how are you?

Him: Better now that you're smiling.

Me: But I'm not smiling?.

He looked at me and I started smiling.

Me: Stop it.

I playfully hit him.

Me: Just come back.

We walked out to our bedroom with him following me....We got into bed and I snuggled myself into his body.

Him: How was your day?

Me: It was good actually I got you a gift but you'll have to wait before you could see it.

Him: then why tell me now?

Me: Because I'm excited..

Him: okey...I got a massage from the bank.

Me: oh hho!....how much we spend?

Him: not much...just emm let's say a car.

I closed my eyes with both my hands and he laughed.

Him: don't worry it's okey.

Me: so I still get my walk in closet?

He nodded.

Me: owk another thing, I was thinking that maybe Minenhle can enroll at Mary's Academy.

Him: the boarding school?

Me: yes...look it's not far so we could visit her when ever we want plus security is tight and they have good academic records.

Him: mhh.

Me: come on pumpkin will be thrilled...this adds to you making it up to me.

He chuckled.

Him: can I think about it?

Me: That's all I ask...but don't take too long.

Him: Yeah Yeah.

He turned off the side lamp and I laid my head in his chest while he was brushing my hair..

I slowly drifted to dreamland.

I know that maybe you're asking yourself why I was so quick to forgive him but he's my husband and I love him and it doesn't matter if I stay angry at him for a lifetime my love for him won't get any less so why waste time holding grudges when you can just work it out?, However that doesn't mean he can get off with everything. I'm still disappointed in him for sleeping with Sandy He should have known better...but hey for better and for worse.

~

~

[Tyson]

I woke up to a knock on the door and it was Minenhle.

Me: Minnie?

Her: Tyson open.

I don't know what is the cause of the sudden change...not so long ago I was Daddy and today I'm Tyson..

I let out a sigh.

I opened but didn't let her come in, Rato was still sleeping so I didn't want Minnie to wake her up.

Me: Princess?

Her: MamaD is calling Candy.

Me: okey tell her she's coming.

She ran down stairs.

Venus: What did I do now?.

I turned to look at her and she was yawning.

Me: Good morning.

I kissed her forehead.

Me: I don't know maybe she wants to say something.

I raised my shoulders

Her: owk let me go to her.

She went to the bathroom and I walked to the kitchen.

Within a few minutes Venus got in as well.

Her: Mah?

MamaD: please talk to your daughter.

Her: what did she do now?

MamaD: she refuses to eat because she has to go jogging with you.

Her: oh eish.

I chuckled and she looked at me.

Me: Princess Candy is not going jogging today she's tired....eat your food.

Minnie: Candy?

Her: I'm sorry Pumpkin.

Minnie: OK but I'm not eating..

Me: Why?

Minnie: Candy please tell Tyson I'm angry at him.

Me: what did I do now?

Minnie: you don't want me to go with Candy.

Me: That's not true.

She folded her arms and Rato started laughing.

Me: Mah?

MamaD: Minenhle eat?!.

She started eating while sulking.

Venus: come here pumpkin.

My phone rang.

Me: Skhumbuzo?.

I walked out.



Him: how are you man?

Me: I'm good hey really good.

Him: I can tell.

We continued talking, well mostly it was him telling me how I should worship the ground Venus walks on and I couldn't agree more.

I swear I will never disappoint her again....not intentonaly

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*39\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Me: I don't know Mah maybe we should wait a bit.

MamaD: I'm not saying rush into it...I'm just saying it needs to be done, might not be now

but eventually.

Me: I'll talk to Venus first but if she doesn't like the idea...

She cut me.

Her: Make her see the importance of it.

I let out a sigh.

Me: I'll talk to her.

MamaD: good and I don't know what terrifies you so much Venus is not even like that.

I laughed as she walked out on me doing those model walks....MamaD is so crazy you'd swear she's not a mother of two grown ups.

I let out a sigh.

I have to talk to Venus about a cleansing ceremony, I might be reading too much into this but Venus has been very religious lately, last thing I want is her thinking I don't respect her choices.

Venus: Baby?

Me: Yes.

I raised my head to look at her and damn she looked gorgeous.

Her: I'm ready we can go.

We're are... no actually she's going to the salon and I'm accompanying her there.

We got outside and I opened the door for her and we got.

Good thing she's only going there for her nails otherwise we'd stay there for a lifetime.

Her: and??? out with it already.

Me: oh eish they said registration period has passed plus it's full.

She was disappointed to hear that.

Her: Minnie is not going to like this...but then it's mid Feb what was I expecting.

Me: But daddy, well "Tyson" managed to pull a

few strings so...

Her: oh my God really???

She was hugging me and kissing my cheek, jumping inside the car all the same time.

Me: Rato careful I'm driving.

Her: Thank you baby.

She was so thrilled I swear I could see Minnie in her....I'm truly blessed, there's not even a single day where Venus ill-treated Minnie ....you can't even tell she's not her biological mother.

I chuckled.

Her: OK when can she start and what should we bring along?

Me: Bank deposit slip, her birth certificate well a copy and herself...she can start on Monday.

Her: That's mean we only have a few days to prepare.

Me: Prepare what?

Her: everything...clothes, stationary everything that she'll need.

I just looked at her and smiled...I enjoyed seeing her that happy.

We got to the salon and I insisted on waiting in the car after I walked her in, luckily the shop was not that busy so it took less than I expected.

Her: look.....actually don't.

She pulled her hands back.

Her: you wouldn't know the difference anyways.

I shock my head and kissed her cheek before I opened the door for her.

Me: Rato.

Her: Bongani.

I moved my hand to her waist trying to tickle her....She quickly moved away giggling.

Her: Bongani you're driving.

Me: I'll catch you.

She continued laughing.

Her: what were you saying?

Me: I was thinking actually MamaD suggested it but if you don't want to it's okey baby....

Her: Tyson what is it?

Me: A cleansing ceremony for emm you know.

Her: oh....oh...that's, actually it's not a bad idea.

Me: Really?

I breath out heavily and she laughed.

Her: What was that about?

Me: I don't know ....I just thought you won't like the idea.

She smiled.

Her: well I do and since we didn't have a memorial I think we should have something small to celebrate his life that's if it's allowed

though?

Me: I doubt that it can be a problem but I'll speak to MamaD.

Her: okey.

I drove us home and we shared the good news with Minnie who was over the moon, if it was up to her she'd be in school already.

Well days went on fast and before we knew it we were at the school gate waving at Minnie. I can't believe my little girl is going to a boarding school...Venus even shed a few tears.

~

~

[Venus]

Four months later....Tyson and I were still very much in love, We'd fight now and then but only because he was too overprotective sometimes I thought he just wanted to control me but deep down I knew that's not true.

I left my job at the netcare because I needed to focus on initiating my own practise and I must say it was looking up with My husband's help here and there of course.

We were then on our way down to KZN.

With everyone so occupied we ended up scheduling the ceremony to this weekend.

Minnie: Mommy.

I looked behind because she was sitting at the back.

Me: pumpkin..

Her: Come...

I moved my head closer to her and she cupped my head will whispering to me.

Her: I need to pee.

I chuckled.

She's only telling me because she knows Tyson will shout at her, He told her to pee before we



left home.

Me: Can't you hold it in for a while?

She nodded but I could see she was uncomfortable.

Me: Baby?.

Tyson: Mhh.

Me: Can you pull over for a minute?

Him: What now?

I started blowing my face with my hand.

Me: I'm not okey I feel like...like throwing up.

Him: Rato there's a garage a few miles from here....

Me: I don't think I can wait.

Him: I can't pull over now look there's.....

I pulled the whole vomiting threat act on him and he pulled over to the side.

I got out with Minnie and started waking

through the trees.

Him: I thought YOU felt like throwing up?

He was shouting...I just rushed with Minnie on my arms.

We got to a shady area she peed and we got back to the road.

We arrived in Kzn late at night and we were so tired, Minnie was even sleeping.

The next day I woke up early because as we all know....even if the ceremony is scheduled for the next day people will come the day before.

The day was mad busy with the preparations and stuff but I must say the neighbours were really helpful and later on Amanda and Skhumbuzo arrived.

We were gathered around the table peeling vegetable.

There was this girl who kept on being cheeky because apparently she's Tyson's childhood

girlfriend.

Her: And Khanyi just understood that what we had with Tyson was different and strong.

I chuckled and Amanda looked at me.

Her: So Venusi...

she literally put the "i" on my name.

Her: What is it that you do?...or you're just exploiting Tyson's money..Phela I know a goaldigger when I see one.

I mubbled "More like you know yourself".

Her: Slaying in his money like that!...that's just bitchy.

Amanda: Hey that's....!!

I cut her short.

Me: I got this Amanda....sorry sisi what did you say your name was again?

Her: Pinky.

She said that with an attitude.

Me: yes....I know that You're probably Tyson's ex girlfriend but I'm his wife...Dr "Tyson" Khumalo...okey?....and I'm just about tired of your attitude....if you don't want to be here there's the door!!!.

She gave me the hand.

Her: I was just saying that you can flash that diamond ring of yours but we all know I got here first.

Me: well Sumsang E250 came first before the iPhones so what's your point?

She clicked her tongue and Amanda winked at me.

The room was silent for a while, only our peeling made sounds....I was so proud for shutting her up.

Her: But then ancestors have their way of setting a trap free.

Before She finished her second my hand had already made a trip to her cheek.

How dare she makes such comment about my late son?!...I was fuming in anger.

Amanda: You know what just go....get out of here!!

Pinky tipitoeed her way out.

I took Minnie's hand who was busy eating raw carrots and walked out to the room Tyson and I were sleeping in.

After some time I cooled down and bath Minnie before bathing myself....Tyson got in looking like a mess.

Me: what happened?

Him: The cow happened!.

I laughed at him.

Me: So you're telling me that a simple task got you this messy?

He chuckled and I patted on his back.

Me: I'll run you a bath.

I walked out to fix him his bath and when I came back they were having a chat with Minnie.

Him: I won't tell you then.

They were holding hands with Tyson sitting on the edge of the bed and Minnie standing in between his legs.

I leaned on the door way with my arms folded.

Her: But I want to know....OK some girl said it.

Him: She said what exactly?...and what girl?...was it at school?

Her: I don't remember and no she's old....the lady that Candy slapped the time you and Uncle went to fetch the cow.

I swear I choked on my saliva.

Tyson looked at me and I cleared my throat.

Him: Minnie go to MamaD.

Her: Tyson ?.....you said you'll tell me if I tell you where I heard it.

Him: Minnie you're still young to be asking about ancestors.....just go okey?.

She went out with her hands inside her gown pockets.

Tyson and I looked at each other before he broke the silence.

Him: Are you okey?

He held my hands and made me sit on his lap.

Me: I'm okey.

I flashed a smile.

Him: Who is she?

Me: Pinky....she made a silly comment about ancestors freeing you because I was about to trap you with our son.

He clenched his teeth in anger.

Me: Don't worry I sorted her out.

I gave him a baby kiss and he smiled but even Minnie would see that his smile was faked.

Him: Rest Rato.

Me: what??! No way.

He laughed because I was speaking so fast plus in an American accent.

Him: You're crazy....

Me: I know hey..

I wrapped my hands around him.

Me: You know I was thinking....we should find new birthdates.

Him: Why?

Me: well our son died on your birthday and his memorial is on my birthday tomorrow.

Him: oh....Yeah...so what do you have in mind?

Me: Nothing for now but we'll work something out.



He kissed me and we walked out to help around.....well he was going for his bath.

On our way he was busy whispering stuff in my ear and I'd laugh until we noticed we had an audience.

Amanda: enough already.....Venus come here.

She pulled me off Tyson's hands and I laughed blowing Tyson a kiss...

He looked at me smiling then he looked down shaking his head.

~~~

The rest of the ceremony was very successful and we were now on our way back home....

Me: Pull over I'll drive.

He flashed a smile and pulled over.

I got out of my sit and covered the sleeping Minnie with a blanket before taking the gear.

[08/29, 09:50] Man W' No Name: The Arranged:

Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*40\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I had just finished washing dishes after dinner when Amanda and Candice barged in making noise.

Me: Hey keep it down.

Amanda: For who??.

She said that laughing and I just shock my head....these girls are crazy.

Me: Shouldn't you be home cuddling with your husbands?.

Candice: No ways...we are exactly where we should be.

Amanda: go get dressed we're going out.

Me: No I'll pass thank you.

Candice: it'll be fun.

Tyson walked in.

Him: Ladies...

Candice: Hey Tyson!.

Amanda: Bro.

Tyson: so.... you're all ready to go?

I looked at him.

Me: You know about this?

Him: Skhumbuzo called asking me to organise security for you ladies.

Me: What security?

Him: I thought you're going to a club.

Me: No no no!.

Candice: Yes yes yes!.

Amanda: Come on!.

I looked at Tyson and he raised his shoulders.

Me: Fine...let me refresh a bit.

Amanda: No you're good come...

Me: let me take....

She was literally pulling my arm.

Me: Tyson?.

Him: Amanda wait.

Candice couldn't stop laughing, for a second there I thought she was high or something.

Amanda: What?

Him: Let her take a jacket, it's cold outside.

She let go of me.

Me: Thank you.

Amanda looked at me.

Him: Plus you still have to wait for DK.

Candice: what?...why?

Him: He'll be your driver for the night.

Amanda: Yay!!! I'm so happy!!!.

She was being sarcastic and Tyson chuckled.

We got inside the club and it was really happening.....just that it was a little crowded and loud for my liking.

We managed to find ourselves a nice cozy spot which was away from all the noise.

Me: So ladies what are we celebrating?

Amanda: You....your birthday.

It then clicked.

Me: Oh!!!!!!....I should have known..

Candice: I'll get the drinks.

She disappeared and came back with wine....a lot of it.

Me: woaw! should you be drinking?

Amanda: I'm not breast feeding so why not??!.

I shock my head as she gulped on that glass.

Candice: Here!.

She gave me the glass.

Me: No I'll pass!.

Candice: ai Venus don't bore us...we're celebrating you here....

I cut her sentence.

Me: Okey okey!...no need to remind me.

I took the wine and drank....It was one glass after another before we knew it we were all drunk. We hit the floor and danced for a while before we decided to go home..

It's a good thing Tyson insisted on DK being our driver otherwise we would have had a problem because not even a single of us was close to being sobber.

I remember DK dropping me off the rest I don't remember but I was woken up by Tyson making

noise intentionally.

Him: Minnie!!

Me: Gosh!

Since does he shout at Minnie all the way from our bedroom...he was just being mean.

I took the pillow and put it over my head.

Him: Princess!!.

I threw the pillow at him.

Me: Tyson stop it.

He laughed.

Me: It's not funny.

Him: You should have took it easy on that wine.

Me: Great Bongani just great....kicking an already down horse!.

Him: oh so not only you got wasted baby but you're now a horse.

He literally threw himself on the bed....making

my head ache more.

I gave him a dead stare and he laughed.

Him: Come I'll make you coffee.

I looked at him for a second....my gut told me he was pulling my leg.

Him: I'm serious come before I change my mind.

I got up and wore my gown and morning shoes.  
We found Amanda sipping on a drink, She had a cup of coffee next to her.

Me: What are you doing here?...

Her: What's wrong with spending a night in my brother's house?.

I rolled my eyes at her.

Me: Where's Candice?

Her: She went home.....this is also not working.

She put the glass down irritated.. Looks like the hangover got the better of her too, she looked horrible.



Me: Why would you drink whiskey at this hour?

Her: is that a rhetorical question?

Tyson: Here baby.

I took the glass.

Me: mhh ginger beer?.

Him: Drink up it'll help you.

Her: Can I have that too?....and don't you dare talk Venus I'm talking to my brother.

I laughed because she knew I was going to complain.

We took our glasses and went to the lounge.

Mamzo: oh hi girls.

Me: Mamzo.

Amanda just waved, she was that exhausted.

Mamzo passed us to the kitchen and came back with her hands on the back, Tyson was standing next to her.

Mamzo: Girls come here!

Amanda: Can't it wait....I'm tiiired!!!!!!.

Mamzo: Amanda?.

We got up and stood in front of her.

Next thing I feel a stinging sensation on my thigh only to realise Mamzo just hit me with a wooden spoon.

Amanda: Ouch!!!...Mah wait.

I ran and hid behind Tyson who couldn't stop laughing.

Amanda quickly grabbed the spoon off Mamzo's hands and ran with it, all along I had my hand where Mamzo hit me.

This woman is crazy.

Mamzo: talking rubbish in front of a kid.

Me: What did we do?.

Mamzo: Shut up!!....."There's nothing a good sex can't fix"...she was imitating.

She clicked her tongue and walked out.

Me: Damn it Amanda you said that!.

She rolled her eyes.

Amanda: so Minnie is a tape recorder now??  
....where is she?...Minnie?!!.

Tyson: Hey leave her alone.

She gave Tyson a stare then disappeared to one of the rooms...

I couldn't stop rubbing the area where she hit me.....it was so damn painful.

Tyson: So Palesa...

He wrapped his hands around me with a smirk on his face.

Me: Get your hands off me.

I walked out leaving him laughing....

One must now watch what she says in Minnie's presence, she really becoming a recorder.

~

~

[Tyson]

I planned on spending the day indoors with my precious family, Venus begged me because we only get to be with the princess on holidays but then I received a call from one of the gang members requesting an urgent meeting.

On my way there I called Skhumbuzo and he said he just got to the warehouse where we're to have the meeting and they are just waiting for the rest of us.

I got to the warehouse along with the others and the meeting commenced.

Him: Shakes has been handling it well so far but we've lost five of our foremen.

Me: Do we have suspects maybe?

The guys laughed.

Me: What?.

Zach: Typical lawyers always gunning for suspects.

I chuckled shaking my head.

Him: We have a suspect...Shakes found some guys on our spot....killed all of them but before he did, he managed to find out that they are planning an attack on the rest of our territory.

Skhu: Who is the suspect?

Him: David Acalandra.

Zach: The one and only wanna be gangster?

He nodded.

Him: It's impossible for him to have such resources so my guess is .... he has some help.

Me:When are they planning the attack.

Guy2: That's the thing we don't know...could be in the next hour...tonight, tomorrow, next week...we don't know.

Zach: that can only mean one thing.

Me: We have to go there personally.

Skhu: and we have to go today.

I let out a sigh.

We finished planning our emergency trip and I went home to take a few things before I head to Namibia.

Unfortunately when I got there Venus was sleeping with her body folded....more like she was feeling cold so I covered her with a blanket and wrote her a note explaining why she won't see me when she wakes up ...and I know she's going to cut my head off if I wake her up...especially waking her up for this. She just asked me

the other day to spend a little more time at home and this...she'll go mad.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever

Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*41\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Me: Baby I know but like I said.....

She cut me short as I was on the phone with her.

Her: No you don't know....Tyson you said a few days and it's been a week.

Me: Rato.

Her: and Minnie has to go back to school tomorrow because the day after that they are opening.

Me: I'm sorry baby but the situation here is out of my hands....but I'll try and get back home soon I promise.

Her: That's what you said yersteday....what do I tell Minnie? because it's clear that you won't be

home anytime soon?.

I saw Skhumbuzo waving at me from a distance.

Me: Listen Rato I have to go but I promise I'll make it up to you okey?...I love you bye.

I dropped the call before she could respond and I can only imagine how angry that made her but I had to focus so we could go home...the quicker I finish here...the quicker I can get home.

Him: It's time.

I raised my thumb up and moved closer to the gang.

Zach gave us a dotted plan of how and where we can get inside David's house.

Unfortunately when we got there ...there was no one at home, so we waited and waited and waited but Nothing.

Zach's phone rang and he picked it up.

Zach: Sharp.....we have to move David was just



spotted entering a restaurant down town.

Me: do you have the location?.

Zach:.....wait....oh here.

We all got inside the cars and took off heading to the restaurant.

Skhu: Finally I can go back home.

I chuckled and Zach shock his head.

Our car was ahead of the others because Zach who was riding with us had the directions.....so we got off from the car first.

Me: I should have known.

David: Ri...Rico what brings you here?.

Skhu: You.

He got his gun out and started shooting non-stop...

The place went crazy with customers screaming up and down and suddenly David's man started shooting at us but because they

were outnumbered we managed to take care of them.

~

~

[Venus]

I got mad angry when Tyson dropped on me. I understand that he has to be constantly up and about fighting God knows who and what for but I'd appreciate it if he spent more time home when Minnie is around.

I spent the whole day chilling with Minnie and Mamzo. I tried calling Tyson but it took me straight to voicemail so I sent him a message.

Me: I'm going out, at least at the club I won't be lonely.

I sent the message and threw the phone on the bed.

At first that was just a crazy idea but now that I've come to think of it...why not?.

I hit the shower and dressed up.

I tried getting Amanda and Candice to come along but none of them was game so I ended up going alone.

Me: don't wait up.

I hugged Mamzo and she looked at me shaking her head.

Me: Minnie don't stay up late owk?..

Her: But I want to watch that movie.

Me: OK but no staying till late okey?

She nodded.

Before I could go out someone buzzed saying he's a delivery guy so I opened for him.

Me: Hi..

Him: Dr Khumalo?

Me: That's me.

I took the envelop and signed.

Him: Thank you...

He took off.

Mamzo: They do deliveries even at this time?.

Me: beats me hey.....it's a DVD disk..."From an early age...Him and Her"

It then hit me that MamaD promised to send me Tyson and Amanda's video of how naughty they were in their childhood.

I closed the package and gave it to Minnie.

Me: Baby please put it inside my drawer, I'll look at it when I get back.

She ran upstairs with the envelop.

Me: Bye Mah.

Her: I don't know why you like provoking Tyson like this.

I smiled and walked out.

On my way there I received a video call from Tyson.

Me: Tyson I'm driving.

Him: I can see that, Where the hell are you going at this time?.

Me: I told you...clubbing.

He got furious....I could tell by the way he was rubbing his forehead.

Him: Venus you better turn that car around right now!.

I decided to give him a taste of his own medicine and rushed him off the phone.

Me: Baby I got to go bye..

I dropped the call before he could answer....I knew he'd call back so I switched it off.

I must admit I was bored as hell...I just sat alone on those high Bar chairs and kept on watching people having fun.

Me: What the hell am I doing here.

I asked my self before attempting to go as I

took my purse then some drunk man stopped me.

Him: where are you going honey the night is still young.

Me: excuse me.

I got my hand off his.

Him: wait let me buy you a drink.

Me: I really need to get home.

He grabbed my arm, I turned back and hit him unintentionally...His glass flew across the space and some of his drink wet my hair.

Me: Gosh...I'm so sorry.

Him: Bitch!.

He tried strangling me while pushing me against the table.

Voice: Let her go.

I was glad to see DK in front of me.

Him: or what?!

DK got his gun and shot the guy on the spot without even asking questions or giving himself a chance to feel guilty.

A part of me wanted to shout at him because I was still very close to the guy, any mistake I would have been shot but I was way too traumatised to shout at him.

He pulled my hand and we walked out to my car.

It only hit me when I got home that Tyson is going to kill me.. I started crying and in that moment he walked in with anger written all over his face....

Him: why are you crying woman?

I was biting my nails while talking.

Me: Because I'm sorry, baby I'm sorry.

I went over and buried my face on his chest..

He just stood still and after sometime I felt his

hands on my head.

Him: It's okey.

He brushed my back.

Him: Palesa you need to start listening to me.

I nodded still sobbing.

He pulled my hand and we walked to our room.

I didn't even bother asking how he got here so fast, last thing I wanted was him cutting my throat.

He woke me up in the morning.

Him: How are you?.

Me: I have a sore throat and I think I'm losing my voice.

Him: Serves you right.

He kissed my forehead.

Me: Where are you going?

Him: I have a meeting to get to.



Me: oh!.

Him: Venus please don't start I have to...

Me: Yeah yeah I know.

He let out a sigh...the "I'm defeated" kind of sighing.

Me: I guess I'll be driving Minnie to school alone.

He looked at me and I looked away, after a while I heard the door closing.

I breath out loudly before I woke up and got ready.

At least Minnie was not that sad since Tyson didn't see her off so I was okey.

On my way back home I decided to call Tyson....I might be angry at him but I missed him.

Him: Wait Rato I'll call you just now.

He dropped the call and video called me.

Me: You want me to get a ticket?

He smiled.

Him: I miss you.

Me: I miss you too.

I stopped at the robot and focused on the handsome Tyson on the phone.

Him: Why are you stopping?

Me: Because I love you.

He laughed.

Him: You're crazy.

Someone knocked on my window and it's then I realised that the robot was green.

I looked at her, she was a white lady who I assume was on her early 20's.

She signaled me to open the window.

Him: Palesa?.

Me: Baby someone just...

I turned and the lady had the gun pointed at me.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*42\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Tyson: Rato...I need you to turn the phone slowly...I need to see her face.

I was panicking and in that instant she knocked again, only this time she was using the gun mouth to knock.

Her: open the window.

She had a funny accent...She kept looking sideways checking if people could see her.

Me: Tyson!

Him: Good....now drive away.

Me: What?!.

I looked at the lady and attempted putting my hand on the gear.

She looked at me and clicked her tongue.

She fired three gunshots and at that time I had my hands covering my ears, screaming.

She stopped in anger when she saw that her bullets weren't going through my window.

Tyson: Rato drive.

I didn't wait for him to finish I just raced all the way to his work place.

When I got there I hit someone's car because I parked in a rush.

I quickly got out and held on to Tyson for a dear life....

I didn't even care about the people watching us all I wanted was for him to hold me tight and he did just that.

I saw about four cars racing towards us and

they parked next to each other....Skhumbuzo got out and the rest remained inside.

Tyson: Rato....I'll take you home.

Me: what?!....no.

Him: we need to find.....

I didnt want to hear it.

Me: Tyson I almost got shot....again!...and you want to leave me on my own?!

Him: Rato.....

Me: Tyson No...if you're going then I'm going with you.

He let out a sigh.

He put his hand around my waist and we walked towards his car.

He opened the door for me and I got in...He then when and talked to Zach.

Him: Where's your phone?

Me: it's in my car.

He went over and fetched it.

Me: Where are we going?

Him: home.

Me: didn't you say you need to....

He cut my sentence.

Him: I'm not going on search for a crazy woman with my wife!.

That alone shut me up....maybe I was being a cry baby...but hey I felt safe with him around.

We got home and he set all security system shut.

Me: Mamzo.

I said that while climbing the stairs.

I got inside our bedroom and just sat there...letting it all sink in.

I found myself praying....that's how terrified I

was....Tyson walked in just after I said Amen.

Me: Baby.

Him: Rato.

I know he wanted to be here with me but not being out there with the rest frustrated him...I could tell that by the way he kept on looking at my phone.

Me: is it..is it too late for you to join the others on the search?.

He looked at me.

Me: I feel better now and I know you'd rather be out there so..

Him: No, I'd rather be here with you.

I flashed a smile.

Me: you know you could've just told me that my car is bullet proofed...

Him: Would it have made any difference?

Me: I don't know....maybe.

Him: I'm sorry I didn't.

Me: It's okey....so are you expecting a phone call?

Him: yes Zach has my phone....I recorded her face with it.

Me: oh.

I got up and went inside my closet and came back with my gown....I changed into it.

Me: It's ringing.

He looked at me and I pointed at my ringing cell phone.

He picked it up.

Him: Okey I'm on my way.

Me: Found her?

Him: Yes....apparently it's me she's after.

Me: Why?

Him: that's what I have to find out....will you be



okey?.

Me: Yes..I'll be fine just....just be safe, please!.

He kissed my forehead and walked out.

~

~

[Tyson]

I got to the warehouse and they showed me the room where they are keeping her.

DK: this is her file.

I took the file and stopped to read it.

Me: She's Antonio's niece?.

DK nodded.

Me: Why would Antonio be after me?.

Zach: She denied that she's sent by her uncle.

Me: This is crazy.

I opened the door and got in.

They had her tied into a chair....I got my chair and sat in front of her.

Her: Rico.

She really is Antonio's relative...Her russian accent said it all.

Me: You wanted to kill my wife...why?

Her: It's an eye for an eye.

Me: I guess that's your way of saying I killed your.....

I didn't want to say husband because she was young for marriage...but in these days anything is possible.

Her: My baby daddy.

I chuckled.

Me: so you're here to avenge him?.

she looked at me.

Me: You know right now I have no choice but to kill you?.... you did a stupid thing by trying to kill

my wife because now your baby will be an orphan.

Her: I don't care at least I can join them on the other side.

Me: them?.

Her: You killed him before he learnt about our bundle of joy so I had to terminate it.

I tried to be hard on her but she looked so young and innocent to be doing all these crazy things....but then again this could be Antonio's way of trying to string me along, the question is why?...because I haven't had runs with him.

Me: What's his name.

Her: it doesn't matter...he's gone now.

I had no time to be nagging her...I had to be home with my wife.

Me: Your file here says you're 19 years old?....so I find it hard to believe that I killed your 19 year old boyfriend.

Her: I'm turning 20.

Me: Still...listen I don't even care...Why did you want to kill my wife?...did someone send you?...your uncle maybe?

Her: He doesn't even know I'm here...for now...and I told you it's an eye for an eye and besides I was doing you a favour.

Me: What's that suppose to mean?

Her: Ask your wife she'll tell you...or maybe she won't....spouses can be very secretive.

She chuckled.

Her: not everyone we marry is who they say they are.

I caught on that trick quickly...She was trying to cause conflict between me and Venus so I stood up....giving her no time to go further.

Me: Since you don't want to talk...I guess this is it then.

She nodded and closed her eyes.

I just looked at her and walked out.

Skhu: Rico?

Me: She must have been trained really well...she's not talking.

Zach: What do we do?

Me: Lock her up....we'll use her as leverage against Antonio.

I took my phone and went home.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*43\*\*\*\*\*

•SHORT•

[Tyson]

I've tried the best I could to make her talk but I

guess she's highly trained and I'm beginning to think that's why they sent her here.

Even after we got Candice to rough her up she still stuck to her story that I killed her baby daddy and that's just bullsh\*t.

I was laying in bed with Rato after our blissful love making.

Me: Where are you going?.

Her: bathroom.

She got up and marched her way to take a shower...butt naked.

Him: Lord.

She giggled and turned back.

Her: Stop that.

I laughed shaking my head.

Me: Can I join you?

I was shouting from the bedroom.

Her: only if you promise to behave.

Me: You know I'm good at behaving.

I heard her laughing from the bathroom.

Her: Baby!!!

Me: Yes.

Her: Please come with my asprin.

Me: Where is it?.

Her: My drawer under the blue book!.

Me: I wonder what does an asprin have to do with showering.

Her: I heard that!.

I laughed and opened her drawer and something caught my attention...

It was an envelop. My first guess was , Venus is planing a surprise of some sort so my curiosity caused me to open the envelop and to my surprise it's a disk inside.

I took her laptop and played the disk.

Him: You should have chosen me.....

I didn't even wait for him to carry on I took the disk out, wore my boxers and went to my study.

When I got there I locked the doors and sat down to watch the whole video.

Part of me refuses to believe that Venus knew so much and she kept it from me...she's....she's not like that..

Me: Fuck!.

I dialed Skhumbuzo's number in an instant.

Me: the girl...I want to see her.

Him: She's at the warehouse...locked up like you said.

Me: Okey I'm on my way.

Him: What's with a sudden change?

Me: Let's just say I found something....are you busy maybe you can take a look at this too.



Him: yes but if it's serious I can make a plan.

Me: It is.

Him: I'll meet you at the warehouse then.

I dropped the call and head back to the bedroom....I locked the disk inside the study.

Venus: And then I waited and waited for you?.

She said that while applying a body lotion.

I looked at her with a million thoughts on my mind....My Venus would never keep such things from me...it's just not her.

Nevertheless I looked at her trying by all means to bypass the thought of her being that secretive...but looking at the situation it's actually possible.

Her: Tyson...are you okey?

I cleared my throats.

Me: I'm okey...it's just...I have to get going something just came.

She looked at me with doubts.

Her: Okey....

I left her there and went for my shower and when I was done I took off to the warehouse.

~

~

[Venus]

Ohkey!....Tyson just switched moods in a blink of an eye.

I couldn't make out what was bothering him and besides when the gang is involved you can never tell what to expect so I let him be and continued with dressing up.

He finished first and walked out without even saying a word and that's just not like him but anyways like I said when the gang is involved I made it my motto to expect the unexpected.

I finished dressing up and got inside the car.

With everything that has been happening Tyson decided to make DK my driver and I can't complain...actually I preferred it that way...

I got to the restaurant where I was having my meeting with the construction company manager.

Yep, I wanted my practise up and running in no time.

Unfortunately I was a little early so I decided to Call Minnie's school, I missed my pumpkin.

Me: Pumpkin..

Her: Candy..we were playing soccer with other school and our school team won.

I smiled...now that's my Pumpkin, very talkative.

Me: Hello Minnie I'm good thank you and how are you?.

She giggled.

Another thing about Minnie, is that she's just a

happy soul...you'd constantly find her smiling if not giggling.

Her: I'm okey Candy but on Thursday you have to fetch me.

Me: Why?

Her: It's a long weekend.

I had totally forgotten and she told me just the other day.

Her: and the other kids are going home.

I saw the guy I'm meeting with coming my way.

Me: Okey baby I'll call you later okey?.

Her: Okey.

Me: I love you.

Her: I love you too.

Me: okey baby be a good girl okey?...mcwaaah

She giggled.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever

Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*44\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Me: Skhumbuzo I don't know whether to be happy, angry or sad....this is messed up.

Him: woaw! wait a minute...don't tell me you believe this shit!.

I looked at him.

Him: Tyson No.

Me: Skhumbuzo just think about it.

Him: Next thing you'll say...Venus knew about this?.

Me: It is possible.

Him: Tyson don't let him play you like this.....you heard what he said, even when he's

not here he wants to....

I cut him short.

Me: yes yes! I heard him....and you're probably right I doubt Venus knew about this and if she wanted to hide this from me she would've hid the disk somewhere she knew I wouldn't find it.

Him: Thank you.

Me: But Skhumbuzo I can't let this go.

He looked at me defeated.

Zach made his way in.

Zach: I brought my laptop.

Skhumbuzo gave him the disk and we watch it again.

Sizwe: "You should have chosen me...now you're going to suffer along with Tyson Khumalo.

You're probably wondering why I chose to send this message to you, Well Since you were hell

bent about how you love him...this is your chance to prove it, Show The Video to Tyson...."

Zach: Sizwe Khanyile!.

He clicked his tongue.

Skhu: It gets worse!.

Sizwe: "Him and Her, from an early age..(he laughs)...okay enough playing....this is what I have for you..."

After that he plays a slide show of Khanyi in different places.....Judging from the background in the picture...the pictures are very recent....plus they have recent dates.

Zach: But this is impossible!

I let out a sign.

Sizwe: " I Know Your first response to this will be, we buried her...yes you did but how sure are you that you buried Khanyi herself?..(he says that with a smirk).....well this is it...the rest you'll find yourself, looks like I still control you even

from the other side".

Zach: This is crazy.

He said as he closed his laptop.

Skhu: Tell me about it.

Me: Come to think of it, we're not certain that the woman we buried was Khanyie.

Zach looked at me astonished.

Zach: Don't tell me you believe him?.

Skhu: I tried talking to him.

Me: I need to talk to the girl.

I left them there and went to the damn room.

First thing I did was to throw several punchies at her...my days of feeling sorry for her were over....She was associates with Sizwe meaning she's not even close to being innocent.

I clicked my tongue.

Her: so wifey finally decided to tell you the truth,



or should I say show you.

She threw the evil laugh at me.

Me: Where did he keep her?.

Her: She's living the life in Congo, making money for my uncle.

Me: What do you mean making money?.

Her: Just that.

I threw more punchies.

Her: She's...

She coughed.

Her: She's a prostitute....they drugged her and turned her into a prostitute.

I felt my world closing, this can't be true...it just can't.

Her: Feel that?...that's the feeling of having your loved one taken from you.

Me: Difference is I can still find her and you

can't, Sizwe is dead.

Her: You think?....do you honestly believe my uncle will just hand you one of his hard worker on a silver platter?....the minute you set your feet in Congo he'll kill you.

I clenched my teeth and walked out banging the door.

Skhu: Tyson....you have to let this one go, it's not worth it.

Me: What is that suppose to mean?.

Skhu: I know that look, next thing you'll say you're going to Congo.

Me: This...this is really some deep shit.

Skhu: listen to me...I am telling you, She's dead...they killed her.

Me: Why would he lie?

Skhu: To mess up your life...you heard him.

Me: I need to talk to Amanda.

I went out and drove to her place with Skhumbuzo and Zach driving behind me.

When we got inside the house my eyes met with Rato.

It's like the time was perfectly timed because I entered just as she was smiling....I even forgot we weren't on good terms when I left.

Me: Rato!.

Her: WaTyson.

With that said I faintly smiled...

Please tell me I'm dreaming and I'm going to wake up from this nightmare soon and it will all be good.

We stared at each other having one of our silent conversation.

Zach: Tyson.

He brought me back to reality.

Me: Yes....Amanda can we talk...in private

please.

I saw Venus looking at me with worry written on her face.

Amanda: Owwwkey!!!.

Zach: Yes in the meanwhile I'd like a sandwich...one made by you.

He directed that to Venus and she flashed a smile before she stood up.

I went to one of the room with Amanda and Skhumbuzo following me.

Amanda: what is going on you guys are scaring me.

Skhu: Nothing baby relax we just have a few questions we need to ask you.

Her: OK!!!....ask?.

I let out a sigh.

Me: This will sound a bit awkward but please try to remember as much as possible.

Her: Just ask...you're making me nervous.

Me: OK....remember when Khanyi was shot?.

Her: Yes I do why?

Me: We couldn't see her at the funeral because her head was.....

I breath in slowly.

Me: she was not to be seen because of the injuries.

Her: I remember that.

Skhu: You went to dress her up before the funeral ...along with MamaD right?

Her: Yes I did but I got emotional so MamaD ended up doing it herself.

Me: Damn it!.

Amanda: What is going on?.

Me: Did she at least see her face or maybe have something that gave her assurance that she was Khanyi?.

Her: I..I don't know...she said, oh lord don't tell me she's alive.

Skhu: Amanda focus!.

A tear fell off her cheek, she looked terrified.

Amanda: She didn't...she didn't see her face, her head was...lord they had performed a surgery to remove the bullets from her head.

She said that with both her hands on her mouth, trying hard not to cry.

I wrapped my hands around her..

Me: It's okey..

She excused herself and within minutes Zach got in.

Zach: and?.

Skhu: She didn't see her either...so it's actually possible.

Zach looked at me and I looked away.

Me: I have to find her.

Skhu: We both know that's lethal....Antonio will never...

He cut him.

Zach: He'll kill you.

Me: at least I would have tried.

Skhu: Tyson you have a wife.

I let out a sigh rubbing my head.

Me: I have to do this, for my daughter.

We all sat down in silence looking for a possible way out.

~~~~~

Me:I've made my decision.....I'll go look for her.

Skhu: Tyson this is crazy...

Me: I know...but I have no choice, she's the mother of my child....my,

A tear fell off....I wish I wasn't about to say what I said.

Me: my wife.

Zach: Maybe we should speak to MamaD first find out if she knows something that could help.

Me: No..She's...she's not well and if this gets to her she'll never survive it.

Skhu: What about Venus?

Me: Lord knows I love her.

Skhu: then prove it....let this madness go.

Me: I'm trying but I can't..listen Antonio is very dangerous man so I can't risk you guys getting hurt....I'll go there on my own.

Zach: That's crazy....you need backup.

Me: No!....i have to do this , alone....all you can do is make sure your families are safe.

Skhu: No we're coming with you.

Me: And Amanda?...who'll protect her?.

SKhu: who'll protect Venus?



I kept quite and looked at them.

Me: If something happens to me...I need you....

Zach: Tyson.

Me: I need you to take care of my family...that's all I ask.

Skhumbuzo let out a sigh as I walked out.

~

~

[Venus]

I still can't put my finger around it but something is going on, and now I think it is Massive because I sense Amanda is involved, otherwise why would she be crying just after her private talk with Tyson?.

Maybe this is one of the things that have nothing to do with me but I can't help but wonder what it is.

So I got DK to drive me back home since

everyone was dealing with demons of their own...I told myself I'll ask Tyson when he gets home.

Like I expected he arrived just as I was about to go to bed.

Him: Palesa.

Me: Hey, want something to eat?

Him: No I'm okey...I'm just tired.

Normally I'd force food down his throat but today....No.

He looked so...so tensed and troubled and and...and he looked so tired.

Me: Tyson what is going on...and please don't say it's nothing.

He let out a huge sigh.

Him: I love you Palesa...I know I've hurt you deeply before and this might be me hurting you again but I promise it ends here.

Call me crazy but I knew with every fibre in me that he didn't cheat on me again so whatever it is that he was about to say had nothing to do with it.

Me: I love you too.

I guess he didn't expect that because I saw him look down.

Him: There's a possibility that Khanyi is alive.

Okey that was unexpected.

I cleared my throat.

I wanted to say something but words wouldn't come out.

Him: In a few days I'll be going to Congo....in search for her.

Okey that was it.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*44 Extra\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

After Tyson threw the bomb at me I was..I don't know but I felt empty....like I couldn't find the right emotions.

Part of me wanted to talk to him and ask him what's this whole madness but I didn't instead I shoved him with a silent treatment this whole weekend...not that he noticed because he was hardly home doing God knows what.

I woke up in the morning and got ready, Tyson didn't sleep home and I wasn't going to bother asking him about his whereabouts...

I had a lot to focus on....like following on the building progress.

So I dressed up and went to the kitchen and to my surprise I found him there.

Him: Good morning.

I looked at him and continued buttering my bread.

Him: Venus...this whole silent treatment thing is crazy.

Really?...One day he comes home telling me his dead wife is alive and he wants to go look for her and now I'm acting crazy?!.

Him: I'm going this noon...my flight leaves at 13h00.

No matter how hard I wanted to ignore that I just couldn't.

I guess I had faint hope that he'll change his mind about going to Congo but No, He's going...he's leaving me for his dead...well recently found alive wife.

He walked out to our bedroom when he noticed I was still silent, I also follow him because I needed my handbag and reality kicked in when I found him packing.

Me: Tyson?.

He looked at me with sadness all over his face.

Me: Tyson don't do this....don't do this to me.

Tears just fell without me helping them.

Him: I have to do this Venus....If I stay here I won't be able to live with myself...I don't want to constantly blame myself or you for not using my chance...I'm doing this for Minenhle too...I don't want her to grow up resenting me because I didn't find her mom when I had the chance.

Me: What about me?.

He looked down rubbing his head.

As much as I don't want to admit it...but it was hard for him too.

Him: Venus.

Me: Tyson Please!...please.

Him:This is already hard as it is....

Me: No it's not....you just have to choose....it's either me or her?.

He looked at me then down.

I felt a strong knock to my already broken heart.

Me: it's her isn't it?....you're choosing her?.

Him: Venus I...

Me: Don't....save it!...I don't....

I sniffed.

Me: I don't want to hear it.

I wiped my tears, took my bag and head for the door....I stopped halfway.

Me: It's funny because I would have chosen you over any one...anytime.

With that said I opened the door and walked out.

I told myself that I will not cry and I tried...I tried so hard not to but I just couldn't stop the tears from falling.

~~~~~

I was at the site walking around looking at the men working...then everyone stopped and sat on separate chairs.

Me: Why are they stopping?

I was talking to the manager.

He looked at his wrist watch then back at me.

Him: It's 12:00...their on a lunch break.

12:00???....Tyson's flight leaves at 13:00..

Him: Are you okey?.

Me: you said it's 12:00?.

Him: yes.

Me: I have to go.

I didn't even wait for him to finish...I drove home like a maniac.

Me: Tyson!!!!.

Mamzo: He just left.



She gave me pittyful eyes.

I quickly took out my phone and dialed his number....and it went straight to voicemail.

Me: Tyson...Baby please ...I'm begging you...don't do this to us...please just come home.....I promise I'll never mention it again, we'll never talk about it Tyson please...Pleeeeeas!.

I sat down on the floor and cried my eyes out. He left me.....Tyson left me.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*45\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

It's been hours and I was still on the floor crying..

Tyson: Rato.

I raised my head up and met his face.

Me: Tyson, you're back.

Him: Rato...I..

He sounded so down and broken....even his voice was breaking.

Him: Forgive me.

Tears fell down.

Me: You...you came back.

Him: I'm sorry.

I ran towards the door where he was standing with the bag next to him...all I wanted was to be in his arms...the rest we'd figure out as we go but for now all that matters is that he's here.

On my way to him I tripped and fell while balancing my hand on the chair on my right hand side.

Him: Rato....!.

He got his hands out like he was trying to catch me but...with the distance between us he wouldn't be fast enough even if he tried.

I smiled as I got up....He smiled back but faintly.

Me: I'm okey.

I stood up and started moving towards him again....and before I got there I heard someone calling my name.

Mamzo: Venus....Venus.

She was shaking me.

I woke up and gasped for air...

Mamzo: It's a dream...it's a dream.

I started crying.

Me: it...it felt so real.

I spoke in between my sobs.

Mamzo: Shiii...it's okey.

After a long trying she finally managed to make

me stop crying.

Mamzo: Clean your face up I'll make you something to eat.

She walked out while I went to the bedroom.

Do you know the feeling when you're trying so hard to stop crying but you just can't...Have you ever looked yourself in a mirror and tried talking to yourself..where you keep on saying..."it's okey...you've cried enough now...it's OK you can stop it will get better"?...that's exactly what I was going through.

It's only been a few hours since Tyson left but it feels like a life time...I can't do this...I can't.

I sat on the toilet sit fiddling with my fingers until my eyes landed on a pack of razers.

I slowly stood up and went to it.

Me: I know I'm not surviving this one so I might as well just die now....I'm not living without Tyson...I don't want to.

I breath out heavily before cutting both my wrist....I then sat down on the floor waiting for my death hour.

~

~

[Tyson]

-----Flash Back 1-----

Minnie: So does that mean Candy will be my mom.

Me: Do you want her to be your mom?

Minnie: yes yes yes.

She said jolly with a huge smile.

Me: then ask her.

Minnie: No you're marrying her you have to ask her for me.

I laughed.

Me: okey I'll ask her...but don't tell her about the

wedding okey?...it's a surprise.

She giggled.

Minnie: Tyson.

Me: Princess.

Minnie: I love Candy and I will be happy if she agrees to be my mom.

I looked at her and smiled.

-----Flash Back2-----

Venus: Tyson I'll never be able to live if something happens to her knowing that I could've saved her.

Me: nothing will happen to Minnie I'll make sure of it. just rest Rato.

She looked at me with teary eyes.

-----

~~~~~

Me: Fuck!.

I've just landed here in Congo and I was in one in one of the motels...I needed a strong drink.

I don't know why but a huge part of me kept on telling me that I'm not suppose to be here.

That's right....I'm not suppose to be here.

I took my phone and played the voicemail message again....for the fifth time.

Venus: "Tyson...Baby please ...I'm begging you...don't do this to us...please just come home.....I promise I'll never mention it again, we'll never talk about it Tyson please...Pleeease!".

Me: Rato!!!!.

I slowly said.

Me: Fuck it.

I quickly dialed Skhumbuzo's number...I needed to get back home Asap...I shouldn't have came here in the first place.

I placed the phone on my ear and then suddenly I felt something touching my neck...it was a gun.

Antonio: Rico!.

I hit the red button dropping the call.

~

~

[Amanda]

I was on the phone with MamaD.

Me: Part of me hopes that this whole thing is true...because if Khanyi is really not alive then...then this whole thing is a trap...

MamaD: would they use something so sensitive?.

This was really breaking her.

The thought of losing my brother just....it's just kills me. I know that in this case not all of us will get their happy ending..because if Khanyi is alive Venus will get hurt and if she's not Tyson



is as good as dead.

MamaD: oh Lord.

She gasped.

Me: Ma?...are you okey?

Her: The birthmark....Khanyi had a birthmark just below her thigh..remember we used to tease her with it and she ended up covering it every time we were around.....it was there I saw it the time I was dressing her....it was her, we buried Khanyi.

Before I could answer her I heard a knock in the door.

Me: Mama I'll call you later.

I dropped the call.

Me: Zach.

Zach: Where's Skhumbuzo.

Skhumbuzo walked down the stairs in a rush.....more like he's just seen a ghost.

Skhu: Zach.

Zach: Antonio's niece is dead...she hanged herself few hours ago.

Me: And MamaD just told me that she's certain that we buried Khanyi...the birthmark is her assurance.

Skhumbuzo looked down then up.

Zach: Skhumbuzo?

Skhu: Tyson just called me.

Me: and?.

Skhu: I heard Antonio from the background...the call was aborted before he could say anything.

Me: God No!.

I started crying.

This can't be happening.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*46\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I woke up to beeping sounds and my vision was a bit blurry.

At first it was hard opening my eyes but eventually I did and I was in a hospital bed. My throat felt so dried and I noticed that the time I was trying to speak to Mamzo who was sitting on the chair next to me.

I cleared my throat.

Mamzo: Venus!.

I raised my eyebrows in a form of greeting.

Amanda walked in...in a rush, more like she's been running.

Amanda: Venus!.

I responded the same way I did to Mamzo.

I had no strength nor fight left in me....all I wanted was to die so that I can rest in peace. I don't know why Mamzo had to bring me here.

Amanda: Venus don't you ever scare me like that.

I turned my head and faced the other side.

I wasn't in a mood to entertain them or anyone else for that matter, I just wanted to be alone.

Aike They tried talking to me or what so ever and I was on another world with my thoughts and come to think of it...things would've been way too better if I died atleast then I would've reconnected with my parents on the other side....even get a chance to meet my mother and maybe if the almighty is graceful enough I'd get a chance to meet my babies...all four of them.

That's what I've been doing all this time since I woke up. I just sat here and thought about life in all....and how much I hate it right now. I wish I

could just sleep and never wake up.

~

~

[Tyson]

Though I didn't get as much chance as I wanted to have with my father and I can't say I learnt that much from him but one day he came home and told me that "Son to know your enemy's weakness you have to listen or watch what he uses to threaten you". All my life I've been living up to that strategy and it worked excellently but today I'm facing Antonio Bassa...A man who sent his own blood on a dangerous mission so family is definately not a priority to him.

He moved the gun from my neck and I turned to face him.

He hide the gun in his jacket, there were four men behind him.

Him: I knew you'd come.

Me: Antonio.

Him: Be good and come out to the car outside....remember we don't want an drama.

I chuckled.

Okey so he acts all Mr goody two shoes just because he's in public.

Me: Okey!.

He looked at me surprised.

I just needed to buy myself some time...because at this moment I have no leverage or what's so ever.

We got to this huge house which I assumed was his home.

Me: oh so I'm a guest....I mist be important.

Him: You look surprised.

Me: Actually I am...I thought we're going to a warehouse or something of that kind.

Him: No no...for now you're staying here.

Me: Well I really appreciate it but right now I'm rather on a rush back home.

He laughed and I kept a straight face.

Me: Aren't going to ask me about your niece?.

Him: oh yeah I almost forgot...When and where can we fetch her body for burial?.

I looked at this heartless creature. But I made sure not to show any emotions.

Me: who said she's dead?

Him: isn't she?....well in that case you're not the same feared Rico everyone is bragging about.

We sat there throwing sarcasm at each other.

Me: why would you sacrifice with your niece like that?

He gave out an evil laugh.

Him: She became a whore....slept with one of my associates.

Me: Sizwe?.

Him: Yes...and not only that she fell pregnant but I told her to terminate it.

Me: all of this...what does it have to do with me?.

Him: apparently Sizwe had a plan to mess up your life hence he made the video and gave it to my niece just in case you kill him of which you did and when my niece found out about my plan with you she wanted to help me also as a way of saying sorry.

This guy is really crazy...who does that?!.

Me: okey so I'm here now you can kill me but I'm not promising to sit and watch with my hands folded.

I said that looking straight in his eyes with a straight face.

He laughed....well sarcastically.

Him: You think that's why I wanted you here?

Me: what else then?



Him: Namibia...I want it.

I chuckled....till I noticed he's serious.

Me: which part?.

Him: All of it.

Me: Then fight for it like the rest.

Him: Already tried that.

I battled with my thought for a while.

Me: David Acalandra?!.

He nodded.

Him: You're in my territory now Rico so you have no choice but to call Shakes...My guys are ready as we speak so I need shakes to back off.

Me: how do I know that you won't try being smart.

Him: You just have to trust me...

One of the things I learnt is that when someone says trust them you just have to do the

opposite.

Him: And besides you're Rico..killing you will attract unnecessary attention from the cops because I know your crew will attack first chance they get.

I really don't trust this man but there's nothing I want more then going home righy now so I just stare at him...I want to see if I can really take his word.

~

~

[Skhumbuzo]

Zach: the jet is supposed to be here already!!!

He was really panicking.

Me: I'll call the guy.

I tried calling him but it went straight to voicemail.

Me: Fuck!.

Zach: Where are the guys?.

Me: I thought you called them?.

Everything was a mess.

Zach: I did and...

He stopped halfway through his sentence.

We saw DK's car approaching.

Skhu: DK why is everyone not here?.

DK: We got a call from Shakes....Rico called him few minutes ago....Antonio let him go in exchange for Namibia.

Zach: Where's Rico?.

DK: on his flight back.

Me: Namibia...that's the only thing he wanted?.

DK nodded.

Zach: that was a small price.

Me: Yes...

I let out a sigh and then I remember Venus is in

a hospital.

Me: I have to get to the hospital.

Zach: going to work already?.

Me: no not the netcare....the one Venus is admitted in.

With that said I got inside the car and Dk drove me to the hospital.

~

~

[Venus]

I've been sitting here with Amanda and some lady who said she's a pyscologist.

Lady: If you don't talk to me..you're forcing me to diagnose you with clinical depression and have you admitted into a depression prog. rehab.

As much as I wanted to ignore her she was so persistent.

Me: That's crazy!.

Her: You tried to kill yourself and when I try talking to you you're not responding.

Me: Who said I wanted a pysacologist?.

Her: It's protocol you don't have to want me for me to be here.

Me: Yeah right but like you said I almost died hours ago surely I need some rest.

I said that then turned to look at the other side.

Lady: listen you're docter and I'm sure you're familia with the situation..Please help me help you.

Me: I don't need help...all I wanted was to die.

Amanda put both her hands on her mouth trying her very best not to cry.

Lady: I know that you think dying is your best option right now but you have so much to live for.

I snapped.

Me: Stop pysco-analyising me!!!!.

The docter walked in.

Lady: She's refusing my help.

Dr: so wat now?

Lady: I'm having her checked in into a cabin.

I didn't care what they decide anymore...they could do whatever they want.

Amanda: Venus just talk to her okey she's trying to help.

She was now in tears.

I gave her a dead stare...I know she has nothing to do with this but I'd rather she's not here.....in fact I wanted to be alone.

Skhumbuzo got in with DK.

I don't know why they allowed so many people all in at once.

DK: Lady R.

I flashed a smile....a fat fake one.

Me: Hi DK...Skhumbuzo.

Skhu: Hey.

Amanda: Why are you here Skhumbuzo?.

She started panicking.

Skhu: relax he's okey....he's on his way back as we speak.

He kissed her forehead.

I looked at the lady.

Me: Where in location is the cabin.

Lady: You want to admit yourself?.

I nodded.

Me: I want an isolated one with no visitors allowed and no meaningless phone calls.

She looked at me surprised.

Lady: well we don't do that but we can give you

a right to choose who visits you.

Me: okey...I want to go, as in like now.

All eyes were on me.

Lady: what's with the sudden change?.

I looked at Skhumbuzo.

Me: I need help like you said so why wait?.

Lady: I see but you can't go now...maybe I can arrange for you to be taken there first thing in the morning.

Me: okey.

I looked the other way and closed my eyes.

I want nothing to do with Tyson.

I don't even care if he found his "wife" or not.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦



\*\*\*\*\*47\*\*\*\*\*

-----Short-----

[Venus]

The first thing in the morning I went to take my shower and then waited for my transport to the rehab. It's a good thing Tyson didn't come here because I don't know what would've happened.

I got to the Cabin and I signed the necessary documents and they showed me to my room.

It was not far from home it was just isolated from other buildings but it had trees surrounding the area which made it beautiful and the view was to die for.

I folded my arms as I walked around the room.

Me: This is practically my home for now.

I let out a huge sigh.

I heard a knock on the door and I went to open....it was the pysacologist.

Her: This is it.

I looked around with my arms still folded.

Me: Yes this is it.

She smiled bending her head a little.

Her: I hope you find the help you need.

Me: I hope so too.

Her: Well I'm on my way now...mind walking me out?.

I wanted to say no at first but then again it's not like I didn't have the time so I agreed.

We walked passed the passage having small talks as we approached the exit door.

Her: You won't be seeing more of me...however, you'll still get all the help you need in here and I do come here every once in a while.

Me: I understand.

Her: Okey have a fruitful stay.

I nodded then we shared a hug.

She attempted walking away before I stopped her.

Me: Oh emm I've been meaning to ask you....how long do I need to be here?

Her: They have different programs with different period and it also depends on the progress you make.

Me: So I have to be here for like three months or so?.

She slightly nodded.

Her: But.

I looked at her.

Her: you booked yourself in willingly so you can also decide when you want to leave....with that said I strongly suggest you stay until you are completely healed.

I flashed a semi-smile.

Me: Okey will do.

Her: Okey bye .

I went back inside while she walked out.

It was then that I noticed that the place was huge and confusing....I thought I was going to be able to walk back into my room but now I don't know which way to go.

I went over to the lady I saw sitting on the bench with her knees hugged up in her chest.

I cleared my throat.

Me: emm Hi.

Her: Hi.

She looked at me.

Me: I'm new here and I ahh...

I was searching for less embarrassing words.

Her: You're lost.

She smiled and I smiled back.

Me: Kind of.

Her: It happened to the best of us....this place is so damn big.

I laughed.

Her: Do you at least know your room number?.

Me: Room number!....ohh yes it's room 25.

She got her knees down and wore her flip flops.

Her: oh it's actually not that far...only it's on the second floor.

I must have been so out because I don't remember using the stairs or the lift.

We walked to my room with her leading the way.

Her: and here we are.

We stopped in front of my door.

Me: Thank you very much.

I smiled.

Her: I didn't get your name.

Me: oh sorry..I'm Venus....Dr Venus Khumalo.

Her: Oh owk well my name is Thabile I stay on the forth floor and I'm a lesbian.

I chuckled but then noticed she was serious.

~

~

[Tyson]

I know that you're probably saying I got what I deserved and maybe I did....I admit I acted rather stupid but wouldn't you?!

If you heard that your childhood sweetheart is alive and you have a chance of saving her...the woman you shared half your life with...the mother of your child?.

Okey so maybe I did things wrong but let's face it....even if I wined and dined Venus she would've still felt bad if I told her I was leaving and I spent the whole week trying yo explain to her but she wouldn't talk to me so I told myself

that I'll fix everything when I get back because at least then Khanyi would've been safe.

I was sitting in the dining room with a glass of whiskey on my hand when MamaD walked in.

She looked so drained and tired.

Me: Mah.

I stood up and our eyes met.

Amanda walked in after her with red eyes....She was pulling a suit case.

MamaD: Bongani.

She started tearing up.

Me: Mah I promise I'll...I'll make things right.

MamaD: She tried to kill herself and I wasn't there...maybe she needed me I promised her that.....

I cut her sentence.

Me: It's all my fault and I'll make it right.

It just hit me now how much damage I've done....Not only did I hurt Rato but I hurt my mother too in fact even Amanda...

I really have to fix this before Minnie gets a share in this pain too.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*48\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I was sitting in my room...by the window.

Watching every rain drop and listening to the sounds as it hit my window.

I let out a huge sigh.

Why did life have to be so messed up?....I mean I didn't ask for much...all that I wanted was to be happy that's all....I never asked for wealth



nor status just happiness only.

I breath in and out heavenly.

I found myself kneeling on the floor by the bed praying..

Me: Dear Lord.....It's me again. You said if I talk to you, you shall listen. Well today I don't have much to say other then to say thank you...thank you for everything you've done for me...actually I just realise now that I have so much to say but I can't find the words so please God listen to my heart as I pour it all out to you....Amen.

I stood up and walked around the room..

At least I don't have to go out that much because almost everything I need is in here.

It's my second day here but I've never been out.

I heard a knock on the door and I went to open.

Her: Hi Dr Venus Khumalo...someone's here to see you.

I peeped outside the door and saw Tyson with his hands holding each other.

I looked at the lady.

Her: I'll be in the reception...if you need anything you know the number right?.

I nodded.

Tyson was standing right here in my presence but I felt...numb.

I moved from the door and he walked in...I don't even know why he's here but I was not going to waste my time fighting him.

He walked inside and stood by the window...right where I like standing.

Me: I have somewhere to be in a few minutes so...

Him: Rato.

He looked at me....as if he was waiting for me to say something and I just looked right back. If

he thinks I'm going to say "WaTyson" then he's crazier than I thought.

There was silence for a while.

Him: I know this is not what you'd like to hear right now but I'm sorry...

He looked away with his back facing me.

Him: I wish I can say more than that but I, I...

He let out a sigh then remained silent again.

Me: You're right...

He turned and looked at me.

Me: It's not what I'd like to hear....and since you don't know how to say whatever it is that brought you here well I have something to say to you...I don't want you here, may this be the last time you come to visit me.

He looked at me like he's just seen a ghost.

Me: please excuse me I have somewhere to be.

I held the door open for him to exit and he just

looked at me for a long while before he walked out.

I closed the door behind him then leaned against it, crying as I went down on the floor.

~

~

[Tyson]

The minute I walked inside MamaD and Amanda looked at me eagerly.

MamaD: And?.

I had told them that I'm going to visit Venus...and try talking to her, make things right and now here I am with bad news.

I let out a sigh.

Me: she kicked me out.

MamaD looked down in disappointment.

Me: But I'm not going to give up...I'll go there everyday if I have to.

I tried by all means to restore hope to them but MamaD seemed like she's lost it all....She slowly turned back and started walking away slowly..

Amanda looked at her...waiting for her to get in her room before she speaks.

Amanda: Tyson I'm worried about MamaD.

Me: She doesn't seem much of herself.

Her: exactly and this stress is not good for her...  
She bacame emotional.

Me: Hey...come here

I held her in my arms as she sniffed.

Her: She won't take my calls Tyson....she hates me.

Me: No I'm sure she don't...she's just...hurt.

Her: You have to fix this.

Me: I will....I promise.

I kissed her forehead.

Me: I will.

She calm down wiping her tears off.

Her: It's only 26 days left now.

I looked at her.

Her: Minnie is coming home.

I sat down brushing my head.

Me: Come I'll drive you home.

We got into the car and I drove her home...well that's because I needed to talk to Skhumbuzo.

Skhu: Rico.

Me: How did I became so blind?.

I sat on the couch where he was sitting.

Skhu: you want me to be friendly or honest?.

I let out a sigh.

Me: Honest.

Him: You really hurt her bro...maybe just maybe if you handled things differently you wouldn't be here.

Me: I was just trying to...

he cut my sentence.

Him: I know but put yourself in her shoes....we're talking about the same woman who chose you over her family, she gave her life for you...all you had to do was to make her understand not just up and go...she needed to be assured that you'd choose her too..remember how you felt when she went back to rescue Max after his accident?...how did you feel then?.

I looked away.

Him: exactly.

Me: But I was going to come back...

Him: come back to her?....Tyson did you even think what was going to happen if you found

Khanyi?.

I let out a sigh....I didn't really get to that point...All I had in mind is that I wanted to save her.

Me: Okey...okey!.

Him: If Venus forgives you for this one....Lord knows how many times I've said this but if she forgives you then you're one lucky bastard.

He tapped on my shoulder.

Skhu: but don't give up on her man...she really loves you.

~

~

[Venus]

I was on my way back from the pyscologist when I bumped into Thabile.

Her: Hello Dr.

I faked a smile.....It was so awkward, the last



time we saw each other was the time she told me she's a lesbian.

Me: Hi...emm how are you?.

She smiled.

Her: I'm good.

Me: Good to hear.

It was awfully quiet for a while with me looking around the room.

I decided to break the silence.

Me: Thabile...about the other day I didn't mean to be rude or...

She cut my sentence.

Her: It's okey I get that a lot.

I let out a sigh.

Me: I mean I have nothing against lesbians it's just that I'm...

Her: You're straight!.

I looked at her as she got closer to me.

Me: I am.

Her: I see.

Me: emm Yes.

She had her eyes piercing on mine.

She brushed my hair around my ear and I cleared my throat.

I decided to move away from her because the atmosphere was a bit deep for my liking.

Her: so you don't have a problem with me right?.

She followed me around.

Me: No no I don't...it's just that you don't look like a lesbian...no offense it's just that you're....

Her: Beautiful.

I sighed.

Me: Yes.

Her: so you find me attractive?.

Is she really seducing me?!

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*49\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

We had just got out of a meeting with the gang and I was outside next to our cars with Skhumbuzo and Shakes.

I must say this whole Namibia thing didn't sit well with Shakes and I don't blame him, Namibia was like his second home and he's back to stay since we don't own the territory.

Me: Shakes Hade again bro!.

He nodded.

Shakes: No smoko...but I think we should fight for Namibia I mean you're back now so they

have nothing against us.

Skhu: I don't think that's a good idea...Antonio is probably thinking that we'll attack anytime soon and I'm sure he has defence all ready.

He looked at me.

Skhu: and besides Rico have one important mission to accomplish he can't lose focus.

Shakes: only if you learned from me and stayed single.

I chuckled.

Me: Single or Shakes?.

We all laughed.

Shakes: Whatever man...listen I'll see you later...I'm sure the girls are waiting for daddy Shakes.

He got inside his car and Skhumbuzo and I laughed...shaking our heads.

We watch him drive away.

Skhu: So any progress?.

I shock my head and followed with a huge sigh.

Me: She got me off her visitors list...blocked my number from both her personal and landline phone.

Skhu: Looks like it'll be harder than I thought...so what are you going to do?.

Me: I don't know....all I know is I'm not giving up...I can't.

He looked at me with a side smile.

Me: what?.

Him: You really love her...

Me: you don't know bro.

His phone rang and he answered.

Him: Baby?...wait Amanda breath....what happened?....okey...Listen check the..no Amanda listen to me check the pulse....shit!...I'm on my way.

He looked at me.

Me: everything okey?.

Him: It's MamaD we need to bounce...

I asked no further I just hopped inside my car and raced home behind him.

~

~

[Venus]

I spent the whole two weeks avoiding the Thabile character and it worked because I haven't seen her since that day she tried to hit on me.

Tyson on the other hand was really giving me loads of troubles I didn't need but after I cut him his access here it got better...I even managed to focus on my journey here.

Dr: I noticed you work really well with others.

It was a Thursday so we had outside activities

which we did in groups...apparently they are helpful in a way and I was then on the Doctor's office to talk about my progress.

Me: Thank you.

She smiled.

Her: However there's something we need to talk about...

Me: sounds serious.

Her: it's one of the things I picked up from the activities you did.

Me: good or bad?.

Her: a little bit of both...tell me, unlike others you didn't have a problem with being blind folded...does that mean you like darkness?.

I cleared my throat.

Me: No actually I hate it..

Her: why is that?.

Me: I feel like I have no control plus it's terrifying.

Her: but today you didn't look terrified to me?.

Me: that's because my partner was there to instruct me when to turn so...

Her: That's it...you had all your trust in her.

Me: That was part of the rules.

Her: Yes but did you think what was going to happen if she led you astray?...Venus you trust too much.

Me: I thought that was the point of the activity....to instill trust.

Her: it was..but with you, you're different...you need the opposite.

Me: well if I didn't do what I did my partner would've lost point because of me.

Her: But you would've been safe....sometimes you have to put yourself first...be selfish a little.

I looked down and started playing with my fingers.



Her: What's on your mind.

I looked at her.

Me: I trusted my husband...I trusted Tyson..I trusted him to always be there for me, to love me and protect me.

Her: and he didn't?.

I breath out heavily.

Me: He did but then he left me.

Her: How did you feel?.

Me: I hated life...maybe I still do...you know I thought after the cheating and the miscarriage we could over come anything but this...what he did was my last straw...he killed me.

She started writing down as I talked to her.

Me: I don't think I'll ever heal from this.

Her: don't make decisions while you're still hurting.

I faced up..trying to prevent the tears from

falling.

Her: here!.

She gave me a tissue and we continued with our session...after some while we were done and I was on my way back to my room.

I spotted Thabile and tried to hide but it was late because she had already seen me.

Her: Hey Venus...long time, I thought you moved.

Me: No I was just busy with some stuff.

Her: I see...come let's go.

She pulled my arm.

Me: where are we going?.

Her: to my room.

I stopped and got my hand off hers.

Her: come on.

Me: No...I...I need to make an important phone call.

Then some girl appeared from the passage.

Her: What's taking so long?.

She looked a bit like Thabile only a bit thicker.

Thabile: I guess you'll just meet her here  
then....this is Venus...Venus this is Thorhbile my  
fiancee.

Me: Fianceé..as in like you're going to marry  
her?.

She nodded while smiling.

I let out a releaved sigh.

Me: thank goodness!...hi Thobile It's very nice  
meeting you.

She looked at me with quizical eyes and I just  
smiled.

~

~

[Tyson]

We were gathered around the hospital bed where MamaD was laying.

She slowly opened her eyes and cleared her throat.

Her: Amanda.

Amanda: Mommy.

She turned and looked at her because she was sitting on the other side.

Mah: Aisuka "mommy" umdala kangaka?!.

Amanda smiled...It was good seeing her smile especially because she was so scared when we got here.

Amanda: MamaD.

MamaD: that's more like it....why am I here?.

Me: Amanda found you laying on the bed...

Mah: so?...I was resting.

Me: you weren't breathing Mah.

She was trying so hard to make better out of this situation but it was way too serious.

Mah: That's nonsense.

Skhumbuzo walked in with a file. He told us what was wrong with MamaD, Apparently her blood pressure was way too low so he advice her to take it easy on the stress levels and gave her medication.

Well he also let us go home with her because he knew that he wouldn't hear the end of it if he didn't..MamaD hates hospitals.

When we got home I saw DK's car in the drive way and I wondered what could've possible be wrong since we were together hours ago.

We walked in with MamaD and Amanda behind me....We found DK in the lounge.

Me: DK.

We fist bumped.

Me: what brings you here?.

Before he could answer Minnie showed up from one of the rooms with Mamzo following her.

Minnie: Tyson!.

She ran to me and I picked her up.

Me: Princess.

She giggled.

Dk: I got a call from Venus, the school called her to say that they finished their assessments early so they were told to go home...and she asked me to fetch her.

MamaD: oh thank you son.

Minnie: We have extra school holidays.

she was jolly.

Amanda: Tyson?

I looked at Amanda.

Minnie: Where is Candy?!.

The room went silent.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*51\*\*\*\*\*

Shooooort

[Venus]

i walked down the passage with my hands inside my jacket pockets.

A part of me wanted to turn back to my room but then again we're talking about Minnie, my one and only Pumpkin.

I walked inside the dining hall and I was very relieved to see Dk standing with Minnie because I was really not in the mood for Tyson.

Minnie: Candy.

She ran towards me with tears on her face.

Me: Hey...

I picked her up.

Me: It's okey don't cry...i'm here.

I brushed her back and after a while she calm down.

I put her down and led her to the chairs around the small table.

I looked at Dk.

Me: Hi.

Dk: Lady R.

I smiled and shifted my attention to Minnie.

Me: How are you pumpkin?.

i looked at her and flashed a smile but that was not enough to wipe away the sadness on her face.

She sniffed.

Her: I'm okey...are you okey?

Me:Yes I'm okey...how is school?



I needed to calm her down before I asked what's really going on.

Her: School is great...my class teacher said next year I can to join the science group..

Me: science group?.

Her: yes...they'll be doing a research about plants.

Me: what about plants?.

Her: Emm about how plants grow, what they need to grow...

I cut her sentence.

Me: wow!...look at you.

She smiled and I smiled back.

I guess she couldn't deal with my starring so she looked down, busy playing with her fingers.

Me: Pumpkin.

Her: Candy.

Me: why were you crying?.

She continued playing with her fingers.

Me: Pumpkin..look at me....talk to me baby.

Her: I thought you're...i thought you're dead.

She started sobbing again.

Me: it's okey...come here.

I hugged her.

Me: I'm here okey...i'm here.

Her: they didn't want to tell me where you are....even Tyson didn't tell me..

Me: But that doesn't mean I'm dead.

Her: Aunty cried when I asked her.

I looked down and continued calming her down.

I've been very self absorbed...so much that I forgot about Amanda...I forgot how emotional she can be.

Me: listen to me.

I cupped her face.

Me: I'm not going anywhere okey?.

She nodded and I kissed her cheek.

Her: Candy.

Me: yes baby.

Her: I'm sorry I said you're dead...

Me: it's okey baby.

Her: are you sick?.

Me: yes but not physically...that's why I'm here.

She smiled.

Her: Don't worry you'll get better.

I chuckled.

Me: you sound sure.

Her: Because I am sure....Tyson was praying for you.

Me: Tyson???!.

Her: Yes and he's sad that you're sick....But Mamzo told him that everything will be okey.

I must admit that caught ny attention because Tyson is not the praying type but that changes nothing...it's time I accepted that Me and men are disastorous.

I smiled.

We continued talking about alot of things...mostly about school till it was time for her to go back home.

Me: Dk.

I smiled hugging him.

Me: Thank you for bringing her.

Dk: it's ny pleasure.

I rubbed my folded arms looking at Minnie.

Me: I'll see you again okey?.

She nodded smiling.

Me: I love you.

Her: I love you too.

She stood up.

Me: Say hi to everyone at home.

Her: I will and I'm sure granny will be happy to hear that.

I laughed.

Me: really?

Her: really...and I know she'll get better after hearing that.

She said that walking.

Me: wait MamaD is sick?!.

I looked at Dk and he looked away.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*50\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Minnie: Tyson?.

Me: What?.

Minnie: Where's Candy?.

Me: She's away on a business trip...

MamaD: Minnie aren't you going to greet me?.

She got down from me and went to hug her.

Minnie: Sorry granny.

she said that while wrapping her little hands around her all giggling.

MamaD: Okey okey..

She looked at her.

Minnie: did you miss me?.

Me: of cause I did....how can I not miss you, you're my favourite daughter.

Sh giggled.

Her: You heard that Aunty?.

Amanda rolled her eyes.

Minnie loves competing with Amanda and sometimes she use the little Lwazi.

Me: DK...my man thanks again...let me walk you out.

I walked out with DK and bid goodbye before he took off.

Days passed on with Me still failing to reach out to Venus...

Maybe It's high time I threw the towel and let her be....I mean I love her and there's nothing I want more then to see her happy and if me being out of her life makes her happy then that should be enough for me.

Minnie on the other hand was constantly asking when Candy will come back home and I couldn't tell her because I for one doubted she'll ever come home.

I was kneeling by my bed praying....MamaD

always encouraged us to go to church when we were young but having children like me and Amanda made things difficult because we weren't the church type...even now I'm not a church goer but I somehow feel I have to do this...I don't know maybe it kind of gives me closure...I feel close to Venus.

Just after I said Amen I stood up to see Minnie who was standing by the door with a sad face.

Me: Princess.

She walked closer and I noticed tears on her face.

Me: Hey...why are you crying?.

Her: Daddy.

She started sobbing loudly.

Me: Come here.

I picked her up and brushed her back.

Me: What's wrong?.



She didn't respond she just cried.

I just let her be while brushing her back.

After a while she dozed off to sleep and I laid her on my bed.

I went to the kitchen to make something to drink.

Mamzo: You look down...is everything okey?.

I let out a huge sigh.

Her: It's okey....it'll pass.

She tapped on my shoulder.

I saw Minnie walking down the stairs....her sleep didn't even last an hour.

I picked her up in my arm.

Me: Want a glass of warm milk?.

She nodded with her hand on her face.

Me: okey baby.

I poured her a glass of warm milk then went

with her back to my bedroom.

Me: Want to talk to daddy?.

She shook her head No.

Me: Why?.

She shrugged her shoulders.

I kissed her forehead.

Me: okay...I love you.

Her: I love you too.

I flashed a semi-smile.

She kept on playing with her glass...she didn't even drink the milk.

Her: Daddy....Is Candy dead?.

Me: No!...why would you say that?.

She started crying again.

Her: No one knows when she's coming back and you change the topic everytime we're talking about her.

Okey that was very observent.

Me: No baby...she's...she's alive.

I wiped her tears with my hand.

Her: then why were you praying?.

Me: Because em...MamaD told me to.

Her: Why would she tell you to pray for Candy?.

I looked down....I didn't have an answer for that...I looked at her again.

Her: She left me just like my other mom.

Me: No...Minnie listen...she's alive okey.

Her: Then where is she?.

Me: I told you she's busy.

She wasn't having any of what I was saying she just cried out loud.

Me: Okey sweety listen...what if we call her?.

She looked at me with tears.

Me: Will you be okey then?.

She nodded and I hugged her.

~

~

[Venus]

I spent more time with Thabile. It actually now that I notice how much I like being in her presence...I mean she's just a free soul...though she sometimes get a little crazy but now because I'm 100 percent sure she doesn't have crazy feelings for me I'm all good.

Me: knock knock.

The door was half opened.

Her: Why are you here?.

I laughed.

She was sitting on top of Thorh busy making out.

Me: Learn to close the door.

She rolled her eyes and stood up to the mini

fridge.

Her: Want something to drink?.

Me: Yes surprise me.

Her: Babe?.

Thorh: No I'm good.

Me: you're always here.

Thabile: So are you.

She laughed.

Me: Shut up I'm not talking to you.

Her: Well she's my better half she has to be here...you on the other hand cicici!.

I threw the pillow at her.

Me: What's your story....you're too hyper for depression.

She ignored me.

Me: oh so when I'm talking to you you don't respond.

I was being sarcastic.

Her: Whatever bitch!.

She laughed.

Me: on a serious one though...

She cut my sentence.

Her: Fine my love for Thorh brought me here.

Me: is it?

I was attentive.

Her: I thought she left me...my father was well still is against our relationship so when he saw that we didn't want to break up he hired some men to kill Thorh because in his eyes she was the one misleading me so...emm two years back I tried to kill myself because I thought she was dead.

She said that looking at Thobile.

Now I think love is some fucked up shit, I mean Thabile is a successful accountant and Thobile

on the other hand looks like she knows her story, why can't they find happiness but then again love knows no colour.

Me: So you've been here for two years?.

She nodded and that scared me....I can't spend a whole year let alone two years in here I have a life outside this cabin.

Me: That's scary.

She smiled.

Her: I'm only here as a way of punishing my father...he pays the bills otherwise I healed a long time ago.

I chuckled.

Me: You're crazy.

We all laughed.

I spent a few hours with them then went back to my room.

Before I could even sit down someone knocked.

Me: Coming...Oh hi.

it was the attendance.

Her: Hey Venus someone is here to see you.

Me: Is he a Khumalo?

Her: It's a she..

my first guess was MamaD, I've been ignoring her calls.

Me: Please tell her I can't see visitors right now.

I tried closing the door.

Her: She said she's your daughter...

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*53\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

The way MamaD was when she saw me...I don't



even know how to explain it.

I had to spend the night in her bedroom just to make sure she's okay. A part of me feels bad for not letting her in and that might be the reason why she felt like this whole thing is her fault.

I woke up first in the morning and went to my bedroom.

I needed my toiletry bag which was in the suitcase.

I got inside the room without knocking and found Tyson sitting on the chair, the bed was nicely made and it was evidence that he didn't sleep on it.

He woke up when he heard the door closing.

Me: sorry I didn't mean to wake you up.

Him: It's okay.

He stood up and walked to the bathroom and I got what I came for and went back to MamaD's

bedroom.

I took a quick shower and I found her awake when I came to get dressed.

Me: MamaD.

Her: Girl friend.

I chuckled.

Me: will you ever stop calling me by that.

She smiled.

Her: Where are you going?.

Me: off to make breakfast.

Her: I'll come with you..

Me: No...you need to rest.

Her: No no no....you don't get to tell me what to do...

I laughed because she was dead serious.

Me: okey but let me change into something else.

I walked back to my room and this time I got in

just as Tyson was about to wear his shirt.

I didn't pay much attention I just browsed through my suitcase and got what I wanted.

I attempted walking out and he stopped me by grabbing my hand.

Him: Venus...

I looked at him and he cleared his throat.

Me: Tyson.

He let go of my hand and I folded my arms.

Him: Venus I'm deeply sorry...I acted stupid and I hurt you in the process....

I cut his sentence.

Me: Tyson if you found her alive would you be standing here saying that to me?.

Him: Yes I would...Venus I didn't go through with it...I couldn't.

Me: And you expect me to believe that?.

Him: It's the truth.

I looked away.

Him: Crazy as it may sound right now but I did this out of goodness....If you were in my shoes you would've...

Me: I would've chosen you.

Him: I didn't choose....

Me: You did....Tyson I begged you, I begged you....and this is not about you rescuing your wife it's about how you did it.

He looked down.

Him: Okey I get it...I want to make things right....tell me what to do and I'll do it.

Me: I'll sleep here tonight until Minnie gets back to school....She's too young to have a share in this.

Him: Venus.

Me: I'll be downstairs making breakfast please

show up.

He gave me the defeated look and I walked out giving him no chance.

I went downstairs and MamaD and I cooked breakfast and dished up for everyone.

~~~~~

After breakfast Mamzo offered to wash the dishes and we were sitting in the lounge watching some action movie.

Me: Pumpkin come here.

She was struggling with her jacket zip.

I picked her up and sat her on the couch.

Me: This is....oh here we go.

She looked at her jacket and smiled.

Her: Thank you mommy.

I squeezed her cheek.

Me: okey baby.

Tyson walked inside the room formally dressed.

MamaD: You're going to work?

Him: Yes but I won't stay much....I just need to check a few things and sign a few documents.

Me: What time will you be back?.

He looked at me surprised.

Him: I'm not sure...need something?.

Me: Yes...Can you drop us at the netcare hospital...I need to see Amanda.

Him: us?.

Me: Minnie is coming with me.

Him: Okey let's go.

We drove to the hospital in silence...and the drive felt looong.

Me: Thank you.

Him: Tell me when you're done I'll come fetch you.

Me: okey.

I closed the door and walked holding Minnie's hand.

Amanda's face changed the minute she saw me...I guess Skhumbuzo didn't tell her I was back.

Me: Amanda.

She started tearing as we shared a hug....I broke the hug and looked at her.

Me: Pumpkin...go buy muffins at that cafeteria.  
She took the money and went.

Amanda: Venus I'm sorry I wasn't there for you...I know this is my fault if I...

I cut her sentence.

Me: How are you Amanda.

She sniffed.

Her: I'm coping...how are you?.

Me: I've been good....so what have I been missing.

She looked at me and smiled before she started talking.

We talked about almost everything and also told me about MamaD's health by the time I was ready to go back home it was raining...I called Tyson and he came to pick us up.

~

~

[Tyson]

Next day I went to the office first before I went to my meeting with Skhumbuzo and Zach and as usually Zach was late.

Skhu: My man.

We fist bumped.

Me: Howzit?.

Skhu: All is good...so how is Venus?.



I let out sigh.

Me: She's all good.

Skhu: and you guys.

I raised my shoulders.

Skhu: Are you kidding me???.....Last time you were worried because you couldn't get to where she was now she's right inside your house...what's your excuse?.

I looked down.

Me: I don't want to push her.

Him: So what's your plan?.....you'll just watch her?.

Before I could answer Zach appeared.

Zach: Gentlemen.

He sat down and the meeting commenced.

Throughout I couldn't stop thinking about what Skhu said....I'm going to fight for her.

I spent the next days trying by all means to get Venus to let me in and forgive me.. but nothing was working...I used every trick in the book and I wasn't going to give up. I learned she was serious about moving out of our bedroom because few hours after we dropped Minni off to school she moved to the spare room.

Me: if You really don't want to share a bed with me then I'll move to the spareroom...you can use the main room.

Her: No...I'm good here.

I saw I was fighting a losing battle.

Me: okey.

Her phone rang and she looked at me.

Her: Excuse me.

She answered the phone walking out.

Her: Babe....I miss you too.

She walked out leaving me boiling with anger.

I know that's not Minnie judging from the time and it's definately not Amanda all I know is...however that is...he's playing with fire.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*52\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Me: DK??!.

DK: I wouldn't know...emm lady R we really need to go, there's somewhere I have to be.

He wasn't going to talk so I let him be but I know something is going on and I'm going to get to the bottom of it.

Me: Bye Pumpkin.

She waved goodbye and they walked out.

Aftet watching them take off I went straight to

the receptionist...I needed to get back home.

Me: Excuse me...Where can I find the discharge forms??.

Rec: Here they are but you need your Pyscotherapist signature first.

Me: But she's already gone home and she doesn't come on Thursdays.

Her: I'm sorry but the security won't let you without....

I didn't even wait for her to finish I forcefully took the papers from her hand and walked out.

I can sit inside these walls for months and feel sorry for myself but my family is falling apart..

I'm not willing to let them suffer along....I know the docter said I should be selfish sometimes but I just can't help it...it's who I am and I might as well accept it.

I went to Thabile's room.....she's been here for quiet some time and I'm sure she can help me

work something out.

Me: I'm going home.

I didn't even wait for her to talk.

She opened the door wider and I walked in.

Her: Did you see the time?.

Me: Yes...and it doesn't matter all I know is that I need to get home by tonight.

Her: okey so what did your docter say?.

Me: She doesn't know...it's all I sudden.  
she looked at me.

Me: My daughter was here and she needs me....my whole family needs me.

Her: I understand...so what's the plan?.

Me: I don't know that's why I came here...

She battled with her thoughts for a while.

Me: Can you help me?.

Her: I think we can work something out.

She stood up and got her phone from her side drawer.

~

~

[Tyson]

I'm at a stage in life where everything is falling apart...I am falling apart and no matter how hard I try I'm failing...I feel like I've lost it all and all I want right now is to rest, I'm tired.

I was deep in my thoughts when Minnie walked inside my bedroom.

She stood by the door and held both her hands to her mouth...more like she was in shock.

Me: What?.

I asked very concerned.

Her: I forgot to knock.

She said shyly and I smiled.

Me: It's okey come here...

She came running and literally threw herself to me.

Me: Are you okay?.

She nodded.

Me: how was the visit to Candy this afternoon?.

She smiled.

Her: She's really alive.

Me: See I told you.

Her: I'm sorry I didn't believe you.....Candy said I should say hi.

I flashed a smile

She continued telling me about what they talked about and I must say, I felt a bit better.

Me: Let's go brush your teeth before you fall asleep.

She nodded and I picked her up and carried her to the bathroom.

I watched her brush her teeth while singing some rock song...I laughed because she got that from Venus.

She'd sing and dance while brushing her teeth and I'd laugh at her because she's a horrible singer....in fact she also can't dance.

I know it's wrong but I found comfort in Minenhle...I felt more close to Venus even when she's not here with me.

Me: Guess what?.

She giggled.

Her: What?.

Me: I'm taking you out tomorrow.

Her: Really?.

Me: Yes...

Her: Anywhere I want to go?.

I nodded.

Her: okey can we visit Venus...



I looked at her....I really didn't want to crowd Venus's space..I don't want her to end up hating me..it's bad enough that I hurt her..

Me: emmm.

I didn't know what to say and luckily Mamzo's knock saved me.

Me: Mamzo.

Her: Skhumbuzo is here to see you...I just buzzed him in.

Me: oh I'll be downstairs in a few minutes..Thank you.

She walked out and I carried Minnie on my shoulders and walked down with her.

She was busy giggling and making a lot of noise.

I got down stairs and put her down.

Me:MamaD is already asleep...without eating?.

She decided a few weeks back that she can't

eat around the table...Her conscience wouldn't let her.

Mamzo: She said she has a heart burn.

Before I could answer the door opened and Skhumbuzo walked in pulling a suitcase.

Me: Don't tell me you brought Amanda we're...

Before I could finish my sentence Venus walked in with her hand brushing her other arm like she's feeling cold.

Minnie: Candy!!.

She ran to her and she picked her up while planting countless baby kisses on Minnie's face.

All I could do was just look at her.

~

~

[Venus]

Mamzo: okey enough...Minnie come here.

Mamzo took her hand and attempting walking...she stopped halfway and hugged me.

She said no words..only flashed a smile and walked away.

Skhu: I think I should also get going...

Me: Thank you again.

Skhu: Don't mention it.

He looked at Tyson and nodded.

He opened the door and walked out and I was left with Tyson who looked more shocked then I expected him to be.

I cleared my throat and he looked away.

I didn't know what to say or do...I really didn't think much about that.

A part of me wanted to run to him and throw myself in his arms but I decided not too...I don't know why but I just didn't.

He also didn't know what to say judging from

how he was looking at me.

Him: Ra...Palesa.

He cleared his throat.

Me: Bongani.

I realised I could stand right there and stay angry at the world itself but truth remains...I'll always find comfort in Tyson's eyes.

Me:emm is MamaD still awake?.

Him: I don't know I'll go check on her.

Me: No...I'll go.

I looked at my laggage.

Him: I'll get that.

I nodded and quickly walked out to MamaD's bedroom.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*54\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Okey I must admit I did that on purpose and you should've seen his face it was priceless.

After I went out to talk to Thabile I went back inside the spare room and I found him standing in the middle of the room with his phone on his hand.

Him: Who're you messing with?.

His voice was firm and jealousy was written all over his face.

Me: Tyson I really need to sleep....I'm tired.

He rubbed his face with his hand in frustration.

Him: Palesa!...don't...

He looked at me.

Him: Don't play like that.

I gave him no attention and suddenly, He grabbed me and had me against the wall.

It was so quick I had to gasp for air.

Me: What are you doing.

No words uttered...instead he pressed his forehead against mine while breathing softly...

He leaned over and smashed his lips onto mine...I quickly pulled out and gave him a very hot slap...I didn't know I could swing that hard.

Me: don't you ever do that again.

He looked at me and I looked right back.

Trust my hormones to deceive and sell me out.

He leaned over and kissed me again...only this time he was slow and with passion.

My mind kept on telling me to stop but my body wouldn't listen.

I found myself softly moaning...He picked me up and laid me on the bed gently.

Through it all his lips never left mine....my clothes were down on the floor and so was his...I really didn't realise how much I missed him till then.

He planted wet kisses from my forehead all the way down to my cookie...by the time he got there I was already losing my mind.

I held his head and pulled him back up into my face....I felt a little pain when he entered but the pain was nothing to the pleasure I felt.

He moved inside me slowly...and..and every moment felt new and priceless.

He made love to me like it's for the first time, like he was trying to impress me and trust me I was impressed, even the look in his face with his eyes closed I could see that he enjoyed it like I did....not only did he take my mind away but he also gave me a massive orgasm.

Me: mhh ahh.

That's all I managed to say...He took me up all the way to the moon and back.

By the time he came I had already came countlessly and my whole body was shivering.

He pulled out and laid his head just above my stomach.

We just laid like that with no words exchanged...and eventually we fell asleep.

I woke up first in the morning and I was now the one laying on his chest butt naked.

I pulled the sheets and walked to the bathroom...I brushed my teeth while looking at myself in the mirror and I noticed a love bite on my color.

I got close to the mirror while having my hand in that area....and suddenly I saw a couple of other love bites each one serving as a reminder of the night I've just had....after I spent minutes smiling by myself I decide to hit the shower.



I love Tyson....that's it, I love him. Judge me for sleeping with him or forgiving him but my love for him is just beyond my control, I could sit here and try fighting it or I could go out there and embrace it.

~

~

[Tyson]

My heart skipped a bit when I woke up and found Venus not next to me but I felt better when she walked back inside the room.

Me: Palesa.

Her: Good morning.

She looked fresh and glowing.

I opened my arms and she came to sit on top of me.

We sat like that for a few minutes with my head on her shoulder...and no words exchanged, just

enjoying each other's presence.

Me: I love you.

She flashed a smile.

Her: I love you too.

Those words right there are all that I've been longing for.

I smiled and got up, I walked to my closet pulling her hand.

Me: I got this for you.

I took the gift box and gave it to her.

She looked at me before she opened it.

Her: wrist bands.

I nodded.

She turned them over and looked at them.

Her: From P&P brand!!!.

Me: If you don't like them you...

She cut my sentence.

Her: I love them.....it was...

she started tearing up.

Me: Hey.

I cupped her face.

Her: It was very thoughtful of you..

She wrapped her arms around my neck and I embraced her body with a tight hug...

I don't have words to describe the feeling I felt when I was with her but all I knew is that I belonged right there next to her.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*56\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Me: Candice talk to us, you know we have your

back.

She just started sobbing loudly.

Amanda: shii...it's okey, it's okey.

Amanda was also starting to tear up leaving me with no choice but to start crying too.

Me: Whatever it is...I know you'll get through it.

She shook her head crying..

Candice: Not this one, I don't think I can get past this.

I wiped her tears with my hand.

Candice: He...how can he do this to me...I get it I'm stubborn sometimes especially when it comes to starting a family but...I don't...

She cried loudly.

We started calming her down again and after a long try she calmed down.

Stupid me I was now sleepy with all the crying I did.

Amanda: Let's get back to the others.

Candice: Zach is having an affair.

Amanda: oh my God and you killed her?!!.

She shock her head no.

Amanda let out a sigh.

Me: Are you sure?...maybe she's just a friend...a colleague.

Candice: He told me.

OK that was a bomb.

Me: why would he do that?...was he confessing or was he trying to be honest?.

Candice: No...because he has feelings for her.

After saying that she started crying again.

Amanda: No...No no no..he can't just do that.

Amanda attempted going out and I stopped her.

Me: But that's not Zach...that man loves you and only you.

Candice: well not anymore.

I shock my head refusing to believe her...maybe she heard wrong...we're talking about Zach here.

~

~

[Zach]

Skhu: You're crazy man...I thought Shakes was the crazier one but you take the crown.

I laughed.

We're now standing outside.

Tyson: I wouldn't laugh if I were you...Venus could be looking for my gun as we speak.

Me: Venus hates guns.

Skhu: But Candice doesn't...and she's good with guns...very good.

Yeah that's true.

Before I could answer the ladies came out...with

red eyes as their evidence that they have been crying.

Candice couldn't even look me in the eye.

Tyson's face changed the minute he saw Venus's sad face.

Me: We have to go.

Amanda gave me a dead stare and clicked her tongue.

Tyson: My wife's sad because of your sick games.

He whispered that while shoulder hugging me then he squeezed my hand tighter than usual.

Tyson: Fuck you man!.

I chuckled and he stepped back.

I must say I didn't think my plan will have so much effect.

We bid goodbye and drove home in silence.

The minute we got inside the house Candice

walked to the bedroom crying.

I let out a sigh and followed her.

Me: Baby.

She didn't give me any attention, she just laid on the bed with her back facing me.

Her: Please Zach, you've done so much just leave me alone.

Me: No...I'm not letting you cry yourself to sleep.

Her: tell me...is it about the baby?.

Me: No....it's not.

Her: then you must really love her...why am I still here clearly she's a potential wife.

Me: Candice listen.

Her: No.

She stood up and started packing her clothes.

Her: I might as well leave you in peace with your new found happiness.



Me: Candice I made it up...there's no affair.

Her: if that's your way of stopping me then you're doing a very bad job.

I held her hands and looked at her.

Me: Candice you don't respect me anymore....You do the total opposite of what I tell you...I understand you want us to be equals but you still oath to respect me just like I respect you....I made it up to show you that with your new attitude I could do even worse.. you're slowly killing our love and I can't sit and watch you do that.

She sniffed looking down.

Me: I'm sorry I took it that far....it was wrong of me.

She nodded and I kissed her forehead before hugging her.

~

~

[Venus]

I can't believe Zach did that to Candice and he didn't even show remorse.

Tyson: Rato.

I sniffed.

We were sleeping with my back facing him.

Me: Baby.

Him: Are you crying?.

Me: No...I just.

He wrapped his hands around me.

Him: It's okey.

Me: How can Zach do this to Candice?!.

I know the feeling..I've been there and it's draining.....I don't wish it for any woman.....it mess up with your confidence and lowers your self-esteem.

Me: How can he be this heartless?.

He let out a sigh.

Him: does this remind you of me?.

I turned to look at him.

I then laid my head on his chest.

Him: you can talk to me.

Me: in a way I think....I'm not trying to open old wounds but sometimes I think about it.

Him: think you can ever forgive me.

I flashed a smile.

Me: I forgave you...I guess I never talked about it that much...that's why it's kind of hard to forget it.

Him: you can talk to me...

Me: like ask you questions and all that?.

He nodded.

Him: I promise I'll be honest.

I sighed then hugged him tighter.

Me: I love you.

He chuckled.

Him: so??.

Me: No I'll pass..I'd rather not know but the fact that you offered means a lot to me.

He smiled.

Him: You mean a lot to me.

He kissed my forehead.

After our endless pillow talk I drifted off to lala land...I was woken up by what felt like a heart burn.

I switched on my side lamp and Tyson was fast asleep.

I suddenly felt like throwing up and I quickly ran to the bathroom...After an exhausting throwing up I stood up to regain my strength then a thought hit me.

I took my phone and dialed Amanda.

Her: Venus it's minutes after midnight.

She sounded very sleepy.

Me: Amanda...remember the time we visited you with Minnie at the hospital..

Her: I don't know...

Me: Come on think....the time we dissed Bab'Zungu for his walk Minnie said he walks like a pop star and we laughed.

Her: oh that...you woke me up for that.

Me: When was it...is it like more than three weeks back?.

Her: emmm yeah could be...why?.

I stopped to think.

Me: I think I'm pregnant!.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*55\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

The rain was pouring hard outside so we decided to stay indoors and watch movies...Tyson has been missing work a lot these days but I'm not complaining..having him next to me is the best feeling ever.

We were sitting inside covers inside our bedroom watching from the laptop because Mamzo and MamaD were watching some TV drama we didn't want to interrupt.

Me: It's getting dark outside.

Him: mhh.

Me: Do you want something to eat?.

Him: No I'm good.

I looked at him and he sighed.

Him: I guess this is the part where you force me

to eat.

I smiled with my eyes still at him.

Him: No...I'm okey like okey okey.

Me: okey.

He smiled shaking his head and I got out of bed.

Him: where are you going now?.

Me: Kitchen...I need to start cooking.

Him: Why don't we order in?.

Me: No...I want a home cooked meal.

Him: you can order anything you like...come on  
it's cold, you don't have to get out of bed.

I laughed.

Me: oh so this is what this is about, so I'm your  
heater now?.

He laughed.

Him: You're crazy Rato..

Me: Yeah right..."I know, I don't need someone

to tell me".

I sang that while moving around in a form of dance and he laughed burying his face in his hands.

Me: "Who said I need your opinion"... I'm good.

Him: Yes you are baby.

He was being sarcastic and I walked outside shaking my behind.

Him: Yeah Baby!.

He was shouting and I couldn't help but laugh.

Well the rest of the day went well and the next I was woken up by Tyson shaking me.

Me: Mhh.

Him: Baby wake up.

Me: 5 minutes.

Him: You said that an hour ago.

Me: Tyson it's still early.



I spoke with my eyes still closed.

Him: Come on...it's nine o'clock already.

Me: So?....it's not like I have somewhere to get.

Him: Yes you do now wake up.

I woke because he was being so damn persistent...I brushed my eyes before opening them.

Me: I'm up.

Stupid him, he was smiling.

Him: come let's get you cleaned up.

Me: Tyson I...

He cut my sentence.

Him: You're mad at me I know...now come.

I angrily pulled off the bed covers and followed him to the bathroom.

He had it all decorated, there's also a warm bubble bath water prepared for me.

I looked at him with my arms folded.

Ne: This could've waited.

Him: Do I have to bath you because trust me I will.

He attempted touching me and I yanked his hand.

Me: I can bath myself.

He walked out smiling.

After the bath I felt fresh, I must say it really did me good and I only realised when all the sleepiness was gone.

I walked to the bedroom with a towel wrapped around my body.

Me: Baby.

Him: mhh.

Me: Going somewhere?.

Him: finish dressing up I have a surprise for you.

After saying that he left...leaving me with a curious mind.

I quickly got dressed in casual then went downstairs.

Me: Okey done.

He had a bowl of cereal in Hand.

Him: Aren't you going to eat breakfast?

Me: Tyson stop the tortue....my surprise please.

He laughed shaking his head.

Him: Come.

He took my hand in his and we walked outside.

Me: Where are we going?.

Him: Rato get in the car, it won't be a surprise if I tell you.

I rolled my eyes and he spanked my ass then smiled.

The drive was not long, We stopped in front of

some building and got out of the car.

I couldn't believe my eyes...It was my clinic only it was bigger...actually huge.

I put both my hands on my mouth.

Me: You did this for me...what happened to the buildings which were here....oh Lord!...Thank you baby.

I ran to him all tearing.

~

~

[Tyson]

Trust the time to fly fast...not so long ago we were celebrating Venus's clinic building progress and now we're gathered celebrating its launch which was a success.

Zach: I'm thinking of being a doctor too.

we all laughed.

Venus: don't mind them you're very welcome.

Since Rato's clinic is very huge and accommodates a lot of patients she's to get more doctors to work for her especially the ones who are new in the industry... she said something about grooming them.

Minnie: I want to be a doctor too.

She came to visit for the weekend.

Amanda: Never...you talk too much, patients will die the minute you open your mouth.

Minnie: Tyson?.

Me: Don't mind her baby she's jealous.

Minnie: Yes she is, and I will inject Lwazi.

Amanda: I don't want you near my son.

Skhu: MamaD...what happened to those two kanti?.

MamaD raised her shoulders laughing.

Venus: You're so quiet...are you okay?.

She directed that to Candice who did nothing

but focused on her plate.

Candice: Yes...emm sorry I've been quiet.

Zach looked at her and we all looked at them.

It was starting to feel awkward, Zach and Candice are probably fighting as usual.

We were saved by Minnie who broke the silence.

Minnie: Mommy....can you throw me a party.

Amanda: Why, your birthday was long ago.

Minnie: Mommy!!.

We laughed.

Venus:What for baby?.

Minnie: Graduation.

Me: That's actually a good idea.

Minnie: Yes and I can invite my friends and we'll play together.

Venus: You'll get it wena pumpkin.

She jumped in joy.

Minnie: aunty don't be jealous.

Amanda: Of you?...please!...I don't know why we're wasting money.

Minnie looked at Venus, more like asking for back up.

Venus: Tell her that your mom is a docter.

She looked at Amanda and said it with attitude.

Amanda: Whatever.

She gave her the hand.

MamaD: Hey...are sure you're okey?.

We looked at Candice who had tears threatening to fall.

She quickly stood up running and Venus and Amanda followed her.

Skhu and I looked at Zach and he looked away.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*57\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

After my phone call with Amanda I couldn't sleep....I just tossed and turned the whole night till it was morning.

I don't really know how to feel about this...I am happy and scared at the same time. I'm not even sure that I'm pregnant but in my mind I'm already planning the sleepless nights, cleaning after vomits and all the drama in between.

I feel like I really need this, I mean I'll get a chance to...I don't want to say be a mom because I'm already a mom....I'll get a chance to bare Minnie a sibling.

Me: Good morning handsome.

He chuckled.



Him: Someone woke up on the right side....how was your night?.

I let out a relieve sigh.

Me: It was ummm.

I looked up smiling.

Me: I don't know I guess we'll see as the day goes.

He looked at me puzzled.

Him: what are you up to woman?.

I giggled.

Me: I need to get Minnie to school...

I kissed his cheek and got out of bed to take a shower.

In the shower I was busy brushing my belly...I know I worked really hard to regain my body shape but I really don't mind...as long as I get my little bundle of joy.

I finished dressing up and went to prepare

Minnie for school, we ate breakfast and Tyson drove us first to Minnie school then dropped me at the netcare hospital...I had an appointment with Amanda but Tyson thought I was only visiting.

Me: Thank you baby...wait for my call.

I flashed a smile.

Him: Whatever it is that got you this happy I love it.

I giggled with my hand on my mouth.

Me: I love you, I love you, I love you.

He smiled shaking his head.

Him: I love you.

We shared a kiss before I walked out shaking my behind....I turned to look at him and he was laughing.

Well I got into Amanda's office and did the necessary test and yep I was pregnant.

Fear started to kick in...it was only then that miscarrying got to my mind.

Amanda: Aren't you suppose to be jumping in joy?.

I flashed a fake smile.

Me: I am happy..

She looked at me.

Her: No no no...get that thought out of your mind...I'll be your docter if I have to, this one will live..

I stood up and hugged her.

Me: But remember we're not sharing the news....only family gets to know.

She rolled her eyes.

Her: come we need to celebrate....let's call MamaD and Mamzo maybe we can catch a movie or something.

Me: That's your perfect move of dodging work.

We both laughed as we walked out.

~

~

[Tyson]

Before I got home I received a message from Shakes requesting a meeting....it was only going to be held around noon so I went passed the office first.

I got a message form Rato saying I don't have to pick her up...Amanda will drop her on their way back from ladies day out.

After I did some work I went to the meeting at the warehouse.

Me: Ta...

Shakes: Rico.

Zach: sorry I'm late...

Me: where's DK?.

Skhu: He's....oh here he comes.

DK: ta.

We fist bumped and all sat for the meeting.

Shakes: We have a territory to protect....Kenya.

Skhu: She's under attack?.

Shakes: Baddest of all times....if we don't move quickly by the time we get there it'll be over.

I clenched my teeth because I know next thing is we have to fly there in an instant...and that will fucken make Venus angry.

I was absent in the rest of the minute until Shakes brought me back on earth.

Shakes: Rico?.

Me: mhh...what was that?.

Him: Tonight seven o'clock.

Me: emm...

it was all eyes on me...

Me: Sure.

Skhu looked at me and I raised my shoulders.

After the meeting we decided to get a few drinks along with braai meat, Shakes idea...Hours went past and none of us was ready to go home to tell their wife that we're going to another country and our trip can take weeks.

I ended up getting home minutes after five in the afternoon and the house was quiet.

I searched through every room till I got to the balcony.

It was nicely decorated with candles and roses it looked so cosy but there was no one inside.

Just when I was about to go out Venus walked in holding a bottle of wine ..She flashed a smile then went to put the wine on the table.

Me: Rato.

Her: WaTyson.....join me.

She pointed at the table and I took out my jacket before I sat down.

Me: You changed your hair...you look beautiful.

She blushed.

Her: Thank you baby.

We ate in between our small talks...My baby was happy and it made it more awkward telling her about Kenya.

Me: I see you're not scared of the balcony.

Her: I wasn't scared...I just didn't like it.

I chuckled.

Me: Yeah right.

She laughed

I stood up and held her hands in mine..

I let out a sigh before I talked.

Me: Rato....I'm going to Kenya.

She looked at me attentively.

Me: It's a gang mission...look I can't go into details but it might take weeks.

Her: When?.

Me: Tonight...actually in an hour.

Her: What?!.  
I looked down.

Her: Are you aware that Minnie's party is next week Friday?.

Me: Yes and I'll...

She cut my sentence...she was now angry.

Her: You're choosing to be out there?.

Me: It's not about choosing Rato.

Her: Ofcourse it is.

Me: Rato..

Her: Maybe it's time you left the gang don't you think?.

Me: What!...where's this coming from?.

Her: I'm tired of sharing you so it's the gang or me.



Me: Are you being serious right now?.

Her: Yes!.

I looked at her.....she was serious.

She seriously want me to choose between my gang which I formed in my father's memory and her....the love of my life.

How do I choose between that?.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*58\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Him: Venus this is crazy.

Me: Oh so I'm crazy.

In that moment I felt like boiling up....and I don't think it has anything to do with hormones.

Tyson has to set his priorities straight..I get that the gang means a lot to him but he's got a family to take care of.

He has a daughter whom I don't want her to feel abandoned...it's her party for goodness sake he has to be present..

That's all I want...for him to be present in every celebrations.

Him: Venus I founded the gang..I can't just abandon them.

He was now angry....but I couldn't careless I was just as boiling as him.

I planned this night so I can tell him about our new bundle of joy on the way but the way things are going I doubt it'll be joyful after all.

Me: But you can abandon us right?.

He looked down in confusion.

Me: It's okay...it's not my first time watching you not choosing me.

I attempted going out and he stopped me.

I yanked his hand off and His phone fell on the ground.

He looked at it then back at me.

I walked out with tears streaming down my face.

The minute I got to the bedroom I threw myself on the bed.

I had million thought all at once..

Maybe I was being selfish but Tyson is my husband I shouldn't be competing with the gang for his attention....however, it's not like he's always away...I mean he always try all his best to be home.

Maybe I pushed him too far....that's it...I pushed him too far, the gang is like his baby and I know better than to separate a child from his parents. I have to apologize.

Before I could stand up and head to where I left him he made his way inside the room.

Him: Can I use your phone?.

I couldn't make out if he was still angry or what but nevertheless he was not happy...actually far from being happy.

I wanted to go to him and tell him how sorry and crazy I feel at that moment but I didn't...I don't know maybe I was scared.

I took the phone and gave it to him.

He dialed some number then turned back with his back facing me.

Me: Skhumbuzo...no actually that's why I'm calling...

He turned to look at me and I looked down....I couldn't keep the eye contact.

Him: I want out.

In that instant I quickly raised my head and took my phone from his hand....

I don't know how I managed to do all that all

under a few seconds...I guess it was force of adrenaline.

Tyson looked at me as if he was waiting for an explanation.

Me: You want out?.

Him::I thought that's what you wanted.

I looked away..then back at him.

The room went silent.

Him: You're right...I mean I love my gang and I'd do anything to keep it but if it means I get to lose you in the process then it's not worth it.

I sniffed then wiped my tears with the back of my hand.

Me: you'd....you'd do that for me?.

He sighed then smiled while bringing me closer to his chest.

Him: Not for you but for me.

I laid my head on his chest for few

minutes...just standing there in silence.

Me: Well I'm doing this for myself too.

I got out of his arms and went to his closet to fetch his bullet proof vest.

He looked at me astonished.

Me: You better wear it.

He chuckled and hugged me with my feet slightly on the air.

Me: Need anything else?.

He shook his head..

Him: oh yeah my phone....which is on the floor at the balcony.

Me: Broken?.

Him: No.. it's just on the floor.

I raised my eyebrows.

Me: Then why didn't you pick it up?.

Him: Because I didn't put it there.

I smiled then went to lie on the bed...I'm not going to the balcony just to pick a phone up.

He came and laid next to me.

Him: You're not getting it now are you?.

I shock my head giggling and he sighed.

Him: What am I to do with you.

He moved his hands on my waist.

Me: Tyson don't even think about it.

He laughed, he was about to tickle me.

Him: Why not.

He said that with a smirk.

Me: I dare you Bongani...

Before I could finish my sentence he tickled me and I couldn't stop laughing until he eventually stopped because I was now in tears and I needed to breath.

Him: My phone woman.

I yawned and laid on the pillow.

He brushed my hair around the back of my ear.

Him: Think I can manage to make you sleep before I go?.

Me: how much time do you have?.

He looked at his wrist watch.

Him: 29 minutes.

I laid on his chest with my eyes closed.

He tried telling me a tale story but I laughed.

Him: Rato shiii.

Me: Sorry but I can't help it.

He sighed.

Me: Okey okey I'm sleeping now.

I closed my eyes again but everytime when I tried drifting to sleep I'd remember the tale he just told me and just burst into laughter.

Him: I give up.



I stood up from the bed all laughing...He followed me to the balcony.

Him: what happened to sleeping?.

Me: I don't think it'll work unless you want to be late.

I picked his phone up and gave it to him.

Me: Your phone.

He took it all smiling.

Me: I'll walk you out..

Him: Why are you chasing me out of my house?.

He asked as he followed me to the garage.

Me: Because!.

I giggled.

He held my hand then frowned pressing my forehead against his.

Me: it's okey....I'll wait for you....I'll be here when you come back...in fact we'll be here.

I brushed my belly and he looked at me surprised.

Him: are you....?.

I nodded happily.

He picked me up and span me around in joy.

Me: okey...that's enough.

Him: I love you.

He planted kisses all over my face.

Me: I love you too...now go before you get left behind....remember they still think you want out.

He looked at me once again before he got inside his car and took off...leaving me smiling on my own.

~

~

Well It's safe to say I slept with a very happy heart....things are really looking out for me..I can sit here and count them all one by one but

to be short and sweet..God loves me and he's been so good to me, that's all I can say.

Next morning I got up really early...it was a great day ahead.

It's a working day at the clinic and I had to be early to make sure everything runs off smoothly.

I have to say I didn't expect it to be this full.

As much as this is not a nice thing to say but I'm happy we've received so much patients especially the children unit was packed meaning more work for me....I was fully booked for the week.

The rest of the day went well and around lunchtime I received a message from Tyson wishing me a great day ahead.

I was sitting in my office re-reading the message when my office phone rang.

Rec: Dr Khumalo someone is here to see you.

Me: Do we have an appointment?.

Rec: No but she keeps on insisting....I told her she has to make an appointnent...

I heard MamaD talking from the background.

Her: Girlfriend..

Rec: She said she's your girlfriend.

I laughed and put my phone down...I walked down to the reception area.

Me: MamaD one of these day you're going to have me in a coma...

Her: Aisuka...you thought you can dodge me.

I laughed shaking me head.

Me: I'll take it from here.

I refered that to the receptionist.

We walked back to my office with MamaD busy talking to everyone we walked past.

MamaD: So?.

Me: so what?

Her: How did he take the news?

Me: He was very happy.

She smiled.

Her: I know that and?.

Me: and what?.

I honestly didn't know what she expected to hear.

Her: Hey I spent the night out along with Mamzo just to give you guys some space and when we got back this morning you were no where to be found....Girl friend.

She breath out heavily and I laughed.

Amanda walked in swinging her bag down before throwing herself on the chair.

MamD: how did you get in here because I'm pretty sure that just like me you don't have an appointment?.

Me: I'd also like to know.

Her: I've had my fair share with receptionist....I just know how to deal with them.

MamaD clapped once.

Her: Corruption is everywhere.

We all laughed.

Amanda: Well I've got tickets to a spar..full body massage....mini and pedis....not forgetting facials.

Me: We did that just yersteday.

Amanda: okey only body massage then.

Me: when?.

MamaD: When you're 100 and dying...of course today.

Me: you also know about this?.

Amanda: Yeah...angithi Venus got pregnant and now we have to make sure she doesn't overwork herself.

MamaD: or we should say Rato.

I laughed.

Me: Tyson said that.....

I laughed some more.

Me: But why both of you though.

Amanda rolled her eyes.

Her: because you're damn stubborn...

MamaD: And ask a lot of questions too....now  
come we have to go.

Me: No I can't...I have patients who needs me.

Her: I'm sure they can wait for a couple of hours.

Amanda took my bag and MamaD literally  
pulled me to the door.

My very own crazy family.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever  
Yours

~

~

\*\*\*\*\*59\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

The rest of the week went on really fast and really great...everything was going well both at work and at home. I really missed my husband though and the fact that he wasn't available when I tried calling him was not helping, However, I managed to keep it together...the only thing I couldn't manage was my eating habits....every time when I had nothing to do I'd eat and it was frustrating because I was gaining weight in a blink of an eye...even Mamzo made a comment about how my hips are a bit wider than normal. When someone who sees you everyday notices the change it means it's not something small..but in all, like I said before I really don't mind.

The house was soooo quiet since Mamzo and MamaD went on a prayer camp for the weekend.. they left earlier in the morning so



after work I decided to fetch my Pumpkin for the weekend.

She was so happy to see me especially since it was a surprise...she kept on giggling all the way down the passage.

Well the drive back home was so much fun with me and Minne singing along the radio in the car...I know I keep saying this but she really has a beautiful voice.

we got home just as it was about to get dark.

Me: Please hold the door baby.

She held the door and I walked in with plastics in my hands.

Her: There's no one in here.

She said that as she climbed on the couch so she could light around the room.

Me: Yes baby I forgot to tell you...the old ladies went on a prayer camp, there'll be back on Sunday latest.

Her: and Tyson?

Me: He's out of the country, business....should I warm this up for you?

She nodded.

Me: what are you drinking?

Her: Mil...no Orange juice please.

Me: okey.

I focused on what I was doing In the kitchen and she came to sit on the high chair.

Her: Candy.

Me: Yes baby..

I turned to look at her and she was playing with her fingers.

Her: is Tyson going to be present at the party.

Ohh Tyson....what do I say now because the day is only a week away...and Tyson didn't even have a faint hope that he can make it home before that.

Me: why are you asking honey?

Her: Because I want him to be there...

Me: Baby...He also wants to be there trust me...  
he does.

Her: so he's going to be there right?

She was really putting me on a tough  
position....I wouldn't wanna lie to her because if  
the day comes and Tyson is not back, she'll  
really feel bad.

Me: come here Pumpkin.

She came to Me and I sat her on the counter.

Me: Daddy is.....he has somethings to take care  
of and he might not come back home on time  
for your party but that doesn't mean he doesn't  
care.

She kept quiet.....until she eventually talked.

Her: can I post phone the Party?

I looked at her.

Her: I want Tyson to be there....and he wants to be there too....please!

I smiled bending my head.

Me: of course baby....now it up so we can take a bath.

She smiled revealing her tiny teeth.

her: Your phone candy.

I looked at it and it was ringing...I looked at the caller Id and it was Tyson.

Me: here eat....I'll be in the bedroom.

I walked out answering the call.

Me: Baby.

Him: Rato how are you holding up?

Me: I'm good...just sitting here with your daughter.

Him: You can already tell the gender?

I laughed.

Me: No silly I mean your daughter....Mininnie.

Him: ohh she's home.

Me: Yes....I was lonely with the grannies all at church.

I heard someone from the background...he spoke to him for seconds and then he got back to me.

Him: sorry about that..

I sighed.

Him: Are you okey?

Me: yes...I'm okey.

Him: Rato..

Me: Minnie was asking about your presence at the party..

He breath out.

Me: She was really not happy..

Him: I'm sorry Rato if I...

I cut his sentence.

Me: Minnie is the one you should be apologising to.....she wants to postpone.

Him: I...

Before he could finish there was gunshots and I felt the phone falling before the line was disconnected.

[08/29, 09:08] Strict: The Arranged: Forever  
Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*60\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I slowly put the phone down on the bed and sat down along with it...my eyes were still on the closet door, I just stared there trying to come up with a theory through out what just happened.

Me: No...it's can't...he can't.

I sat down....I didn't cry though...tears wouldn't come out.

There had to be a another theory around this....not the one on my mind right then.

I was brought back on earth by Minnie's small hands on my shoulder.

I gasped because I was a little shocked.

Me: Pumpkin.

Her: I finished eating.

Me: yes uhm...okey want something?.

She shock her head no.

Her: Are you okey Candy?.

Me: yes I'm okey...come I'll run you a bath.

She stood up from the bed and followed me.

I run her the bath water in a tub.

Me: You'll be fine by yourself right?.

She nodded.

Me: I'll be in the kitchen clearing up.

With that said I walked out but before I reached the door I heard her screaming...I turned to look at her and she was swinging her hand in pain.

It suddenly hit me that I forgot to balance her water temperature.

Me: Oh God.....are you okey?.

I picked her up and went out the bathroom.

Luckily the water was not that hot to totally burn her hand but nevertheless I felt bad.....I must've been totally out of it...and now I almost hurt Minnie in the process.

Me: I'm sorry..I'm really sorry baby.

I held her tightly in my arms and kept on rocking her as tears rolled down my eyes....Tyson better come back alive...he better!.

~

~



After some time Minnie fell asleep in my arms...how could I be so careless?!.....What if the worst happened and..and..Gosh!

Tears streamed down.

I tried so hard telling my mind that everything is okey but I just failed.

I stood up from the bed and went to set the security on...I walked back to the room and dressed the sleeping Minnie in her pyjamas and just sat there next to her

The next day was pure torture.....I couldn't sleep or eat....I kept on checking my phone and I had no missed calls or whatsoever...the fact that Candice and Amanda heard nothing from the guys wasn't helping either.

I was on the phone with Candice....I figured it's best I talked to her because Amanda is so much of a cry baby...I wouldn't want to hurt her especially since I didnt have the facts.

Candice: You have to eat something...for the baby.

Me: Candice...my husband could be out there laying lifeless...food is the last thing on my mind.

Her: but..

I cut her sentence.

Me: But nothing... listen maybe we can call the other gang's wives....maybe someone knows something.

Her: I doubt it...the gang is not suppose to be making any calls when they are on missions.

Me: But Tyson called me.

Her: He wasn't suppose to.

Me: What!...

Her: It's disruptive...they need all the focus so that nothing pass them.

I couldn't careless of what she was

saying...Tyson always called me. okey not always but he usually calls and I don't know why this was rising up now that I really need to talk to him.

Me: So you're not going to help me?.

Her: It's not...

Me: save it.

I dropped the call in anger.....what was just a worry earlier was now confusion, anger and hurt.

What if she knows something and she don't know how to tell me...God please!.

I laid next to Minnie....we yet again spend another night with my crying soul.

I must have fallen asleep because I was woken up by Minnie pulling me.

Me: Hey baby...you're up early.

Her: no I'm not....it's nine o'clock.

I yawned.

She looked at me giggling.

Me: What?.

Her: I'm hungry.

I was too...but there was no use forcing food down my throat...Well atleast it was Sunday so MamaD and Mamzo was going to be home. I needed them to tell me not to worry.

Me: I'll make you something to eat just now.

I pulled the blankets off me so that I can go wash my face and then I suddenly remember....last night we fell asleep on top of the blanket...and there's no way Minnie could lift me up.

Me: Pumpkin?.

Her: Mommy.

I looked at her.

Me: You changed your clothes?.

Her: Yes.

Me: Why?.

Her: Because you told me to change them everytime after bathing.

I looked at her and she really looked clean.

Me: Who ran you a bath and put this blanket over me?...

"I did".

I turned to look at him and....tears just rolled down....it felt like a dream.

Me: Tyson....you're really here..I'm not dreaming right?.

Minnie stood next to me as we looked at Tyson.

I didn't wait for him to answer I just went over and threw myself in his arms.

Him: It's okey...

He brushed my hair with his hand.

Him: I'm here!.

Heard him?...he's here.

That's all I needed....for him to be here!.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever  
Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*61\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I held on to his arms silently...and when I got the assurance that I needed...which is that he's really here I quickly let go of him.

Me: Get your hands off me Tyson!.

He looked at me like "Woman you the one who hugged me...".

Him: What?.

Me: You heard me...don't touch me!.

He chuckled and pulled Minnie's arm...when they were by the door way he picked her up and put her on his shoulders.

I let out a relieve sigh before I went over the bed and fixed it.

When I was done I washed my face..brushed my teeth and went to the kitchen. It's like my appetite just arouse from the death.

When I got there Minnie was sitting on the high chair chewing as Tyson was feeding her.

On any other day I'd stand there and watch in enjoyment but I had a stomach to fill so I went over the fridge and let my eyes wonder around.

Him: Want me to make you something to eat?.

Me: Don't talk to me Tyson.

Him: Princess...go sit in the lounge I'm coming just now.

Minnie took her dish with and went to the lounge.

Him: You're angry at me?.

I turned to look at him then nodded.

Him: I'm sorry.

Me: Tyson you had me spending sleepless nights worried sick about you.

Him: I know baby..I promise it'll never happen again.

Me: What happened ?...because what I heard is very different from what I'm seeing...I thought you got shot and left to die and here you come home with not even a small scatch...

He held both my hands to his chest.

Him: It's...DK and the guys were playing a sick joke on me..

Me: What joke?.

He looked away smiling.

Tyson was smiling in my very angry and hungry state, He was smiling.



Him: I can't tell you that but what I can tell you is he shoot me and because I'm a very obedient husband I was wearing my bullet proof vest.

Me: He shoot you?.

Him: Like I said Rato it's a crazy joke.

Me: Why didn't you call me then after?.

Him: uhm..My phone died and besides I knew I was going to be home soon so...

Me: So you figured you should let me suffer all along.

I got my hands off his...and he smiled.

Damn! this guy.

I turned around to continue searching for what I'll eat for breakfast but it looked like everything I needed was on the counter next to Tyson.

I looked at him and he looked back waiting for me to talk.

Me: I'll have a peanut butter sandwich thank you.

He smiled as he took the bread out of the plastic to butter it.

Him: Want anything to drink?.

Me: No I'm okey.

I sat opposite him and when he finished he placed the plate in front of me and I dug in giving no attention to him.

Him: That hungry huh?.

I gave him a dead stared and he knew better than to say anything else.

Me: So I've been thinking....since you let me starve all worried about...maybe I should return the favour.

Him: you want to starve me?.

Me: Yes...for six months.

Him: What?!.

He laughed.

Him: You might as well say I should die....who

leaves without food for that long?.

Me: Virgins.

I said that with a smirk and he noticed I was actually talking about Sex.

Him: you...wait, as in like..?.

He started laughing as he stood behind me.....he lowered his head and whispered in my ear.

Him: You wouldn't survive that long trust me baby.

Me: This is about you...not me.

Him: We'll see.

With that said he walked out the room and came back minutes later.

I was now sitting with Minnie...still eating.

Tyson looked at me and smiled shaking his head.

Him: Ready Princess?.

Her: Yes I am.

Minnie jumped in excitement.

Me: Going somewhere?.

Him: We're going out...I need a new cell phone....want to come?.

Me: No...I'm too tired to be going out.

Tyson handed the keys to Minnie and told her to wait inside the car.

I looked at him and smiled....Him spending time with Minnie was just pure beautiful.

Him: Are you sure you want to stay behind?

Me: Yes...and Tyson...thank you.

Him: What for?.

Me: For being you.

He smiled and kissed the shit out of me..leaving me moaning and longing for more.

He pulled out and looked at me as I slowly

opened my eyes in my mesmerised state.

He chuckled.

Him: No sex for six months huh?.

I rolled my eyes and he laughed.

He crouch before me and pulled my top up exposing my belly.

Him: Hey in there...it's daddy...I think mommy is horny right now.

Me: Tyson.

He laughed while putting his hand on his mouth.

Him: Sorry...listen baby, Daddy is going out with your sister and we'll be back in a short while I need you to promise me that you'll take care of mommy in the meantime okey?....that's my baby.

He kissed my belly then stood up to look at me.

Stupid tears fell off.

Him: I love you Palesa.

Me: I love you too.

He gave me a baby kiss then went out.

Minutes after he walked out I went to get cleaned up before I slept some more.

~

~

[Tyson]

Besides needing a new phone I wanted to spend some quality time with my princess...We haven't spend some alone time in a long while. Between my job, the gang and her being in a boarding school it's really hard....everytime she's home everyone would want a piece of her, funny enough they'd complain when she starts with her long stories.

I kept on taking glimpses at her as I was driving. She's grown so much in such a short time....and the more I look at her the more my love for her grows...my very own daughter.

Me: so thought about where we're going?.

Her: I don't know...emmm.

Me: Come on...Movies?..Beach?...restaurant  
which one do you like?

Her: emm the beach.

Me: The beach it is then.

We drove all the way to the beach...and  
because she didn't have her swim wear with we  
had to first stop by the shops and get one.

I must say....it was funnier then I imagined it to  
be...we were walking around taking pictures and  
having so much fun.

Me: It's getting late we should go.

Her: can we start at spurs?.

Me: You want something to eat?.

Her: Yes and I promised Candy to bring her ribs.

Me: With who's money?

Her: Mine..

She giggled.

Me: And where did you get this money you're talking about.

Her: well Daddy I...

I cut her sentence.

Me: oh so I'm Daddy now.

Her: Daddy listen.

Me: No my name is not Daddy I'm Tyson remember?.

She laughed and covered her face with her hands.

Her: okey Tys...

She started laughing...it was so much that she even shed tears of laughter.

Her: Ty....no you're Daddy.

Me: I'm not.



Her: You are.

We were so caught up in our little joyful world that we went inside the mall not giving attention to anyone we walked passed.

Me: Okey.

We stood in front of Spurs.

Me: you can go in I'll wait here.

She giggled shaking her head.

Her: Daddy No.

I whistled ignoring her.

Her: it's getting dark Ty...Daddy.

I ignored her.

Her: I'll tell Candy you let me starve and you left me inside the water for a long time that I caught on cold.

I looked at her like "girl are you threatning me?".

Me: Fine.

We walked inside and ordered. We continued with our endless crazy talk.

" This is very rare but still priceless"

Minnie and I both raised our heads to look at her. She was a lady who was probably in her late 30's, dark skinned and very beautiful but ....yeah there's a but, she had nothing on my gorgeous wife.

Her: Sorry I didn't mean to impose....it's just....is she your daughter?

Minnie and I looked at each other then back at her.

Minnie: No...Tyson is..

She giggled.

Minnie: He's Candy's husband.

Lady: Oh I thought he was your father you guys look alike...and Candy is very lucky.

I chuckled.

Me: Sorry you said you're?..

Her: Zoe.

Me: Yes...we don't mean to be rude but...

She caught on fast before I literally said it.

Her: Oh yeah I totally understand...I was just taken by the way you guys get along...I'll...I'll just go.

Minnie: Bye Aunt Zoe.

She waved then we both laughed when she was gone.

Me: That's my girl.

We high fived.

Me: Never tell strangers your personal details.

Her: Yes...Daddy.

We waited for a short time before we got our order then drove home.

Venus: Hey husband.

She kissed my cheek then went over and picked Minnie swinging her around.

Me: Someone is in a good mood.

Her: Yes...my two favourite people are here.

MamaD: Oh is it.

We turned to look at her.

I didnt know she was back.

Venus: girlfriend You know I love you more.

MamaD: Whatever.

Minnie: Granny!!!.

She ran to her all jumping.

MamaD: Easy child...these bones are old.

Venus: Why aren't you asleep resting Mah?.

MamaD: I came to get some water...Bongani.

Me: MamaD.

She went to fetch her water then returned to her bedroom.

Venus: So.....Minnie?

Minnie: I got it...it's, oh there in Tyson's hands.

Me: yes we got your ribs....but you can't eat them?.

Venus: What's stopping me?.

Me: Who....me, they are not good for..

She cut my sentence.

Her: Tyson don't drive me crazy....that's my craving...stop acting dietician with me or hell will freeze.

Minnie and I looked at each other laughing.

Venus: What?!.

Minnie: He's playing with you.

Me: Hey ....it was your plan?.

She ran away to MamaD's bedroom.

Venus: Pumpkin don't disturb her she's tired!.

She shouted but Minnie heard non of it.

Venus: So baby...

She got close to me and brushed both my arms...she went all the way to the bag on my hand.

Her: Thank you.

She got her ribs and started eating right on the spot.

Me: Wow!

She giggled.

Me: Just wow!.

I said as I walked out to our room.

Her: You're taking your daughter to school tomorrow...in the early morning.

Me: Woman you're so bossy.

Her: I heard that!.

I laughed and walked out.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever

Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*62\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Venus was actually serious about starving me....not only that but she also made it her mission to seduce me. The other day she gate crushed my shower and took over, she kept on brushing my manhood with her butt and for a moment I thought she'll let me hit it but no!!!....I married a totally crazy woman.

Her: Baby.

She enters the room as I was deep in my thoughts.

Me: Rato.

Her: Amanda sends her goodnight.

Me: That was her on the phone?.

Her: Yes...Lwazi is giving her a tough time.

I pulled her and made her sit on top of me.

She gave me a baby kiss and quickly got off me.

She then put her feet on my lap and asked me to massage her.

Her: Ahh...ohh...mhh oh!.

I looked at her in disbelief.

She was moaning like I was working my way inside her while I was just massaging her damn feet.

Me: Rato stop that.

She laughed.

Her: Are you getting hungry?...or should I say horny?

She said that with a smirk.

Me: We both know you're just as horny.

Her: don't be so sure.



Me: Really?...then explain to me why you have the need to play with me?...why aren't you wearing panties?.

She shifted from me and I smiled.

I stared right in her eyes....letting my eyes do the seducing.

Me: Just say the word baby...you know all you have to do is ask. We could dim the lights and I'd have you on my embrace and make you explode only using my tongue with a little help of my finger....I'm here, use me.

I could start on that neck...slowly kiss it while you moan my name...then go all the way down to those sexy boobs....I know you love that...make a trip all the way down and eat you up.

I pecked her lip and she slightly parted her lips breathing out slowly.

Me: You getting turned on?.

She snapped out of it removing her eyes from mine.

Her: What?.

She chuckled and I laughed as she was trying to deny the truth.

Me: deny it all you want.

She stood up and took her pillow with her.

Me: Crazy woman where are you going?.

Her: Away from my pervi husband.

I laughed my lungs out.

Me: You're the one who started.

She was getting irritated but I didn't stop provoking her....there's nothing painful like being left with a boner...she should know better, what she did after Minnie's party was just evil.

I found her sitting on the lounge with MamaD.

Me: Mah.

She looked at me then back at the TV.

Venus was cuddled in her arms with her head on MamaD's shoulder.

MamaD: leave her alone Bongani.

I laughed.

I wonder what she told MamaD because she was all up fighting her battles.

Me: What did I do?.

MamaD: Stop harrasing her.

I looked at Venus and she was laughing silently.

Me: So it's like that now?....okey.

I mumbled "it's not over" to Venus and she smiled.

~

~

[Candice]

I don't get what's changed between me and

Zach....things used to be so...I don't want to say perfect but we used to have so much fun together but now all we do is fight. If it's not about the baby then it's random things like ignorance.

Him: Hey.

Me: Hey.

With that said he walked passed me with his briefcase in hand.

Me:You're home late....again.

I drank my water from the glass following him to our bedroom.

Him: I had some business to take care of.

Me: At Reeta's restaurant?

He turned to look at me.

Him: Are you following me?.

Me: No...I went to fetch the take aways.

Him: Mhh.

He put his brief case away then sat on the bed looking at me.

Me: so...?

Him: So what?.

Those words just knocked my heart down in pieces.... I tried to make my marriage work but right now Zach was making it impossible for me...he took away the faint hope I had in us.....I really want us to work but it's like I'm the only one who wants that.

I turned to walk away.

Him: I'm not cheating on you Candice.

I stopped but still had my back facing him.

Me: So what now?...what I saw was a game just like the other time?.

Him: No...the lady I was sitting with came to me...I don't even know her.

Me: Well she's not here to speak for herself now

is she?

Him: Then why didn't you come to us...to me?.

Me: As much as you think so little of me but I'd like to keep my dignity.

Him: Candice.

Me: I want a divorce.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*63\*\*\*\*\*

[Zach]

I managed to calm Candice down, said we can talk about it in the morning because she was moving way too fast.

I admit it we've been fighting a lot but never had I thought of divorcing her.

I opened my eyes in the morning to find her standing in the middle of the room packing her suit case.

Me: what's going on?.

Her: I'm moving out.

I sighed.

So she was serious about divorcing me.

Me: What happened to talking about?.

Her: There's nothing to talk about really...

I stood up and held her hands.

Me: You can't leave me.

Her: Zach you've changed....it's...our....it's not the same anymore.....you're not fun and all that....you're now a control freak who thinks he can do whatever he wants whenever he wants it....Zach I can't breath.

Me: Okey then tell me what you want me to do.

She looked at our holding hands before she

took hers off and folded her arms.

Her: Tell me the truth....are you having an affair?.

I slightly threw my hands in the air in defeat....maybe I should've played that game on her because now all she ever think about is me cheating on her.

Me: Candice...baby listen I'm not cheating on you.

Her: why won't you tell me the truth?.

Me: This is the truth.

She started tearing.

Her: is it about the baby?....Zach I want babies just like you but I can't get pregnant by myself and ...

She stopped and wiped her tears.

Her: it doesn't matter.

She continued packing with tears on her face.

I watched her till she finished and attempted



picking her bag.

Me: okey if you don't want to be with me then I'll go....I'll move out.

Her: No I'm going.

Me: where will you be staying?.

Her: I'll book a room in a hotel.

Me: that's insane.

She quickly turned to look at me.

Me: You're not staying in a hotel...over my dead body!.....I'll take you to my mom's place.

Her: Zach stop trying to control me.

Me: Candice...I don't want to go back and forth with you.

Her: See...you're so fucken controlling!.

She screamed that and walked out.

I remained behind unpacking her suitcase and packed a few clothes in a small bag and put it

inside my car.

I went to look for her and found her at the back playing with stones....it was a little cold outside given it was still early morning.

Me: come I'm taking you to my mom's.

Maybe we needed the time apart.

Her: I'm not going anywhere with you..

I let out a sigh walking close to her.

Me: you leave me no choice.

I picked her up and put her on my shoulder then walked to the car with her.

She was all screaming and hitting me with her fists.

I finally put her down and tightly held both her arms.

Me: Stop it!!!!.....stop it!..Candice I'm tired of your drama. I get it I mess up sometimes but it's not my fault we're not having sex...

every time I come home you always find something to fight about!....It's fucken tiring...I can't even focus....and I'm starting to think you do this intentionally.

Her: What?...that's not....

Me: Shut up!....shut the fuck up!.

She shut up.

Me: I don't have time for this...get inside the car.

She looked at me.

Me: now Candice!.

She mumbled "fuck you" then got inside banging the door.

We drove for hours in silence.

~

~

[Venus]

I was sleeping so peacefully when Tyson woke

me up.

Me: mhh.

Him: are you awake baby?.

Me: man you just woke me.

I spoke with my eyes still closed.

Him: come on I'm taking you out.

Me: five minutes baby.

Him: Rato No wake up.

I ignored him but he was so persistant I decided to wake up.

Me: okey....okey.

I brushed my eyes.

Him: go freshen up I'm taking you out.

Me: I've just taken a bath.

He chuckled.

Him: so you woke up took a bath then slept again?.....wow!.

Me: Bongani I'm tired.

He gave a side smile and I looked at him....He started laughing and that irritated me.

Me: remind me why aren't you at work again?.

Him: I'm a partner baby with a huge percent of the firm assets on my name.

I rolled my eyes.

Him: why aren't you at work.

Me: I told you....It's my day off.

I got off the bed.

Him: okey let's go.

Me: Wait let me clean my face.

I walked to the bathroom and washed my face and wore some make-up then went to change to jeggings and a plain long sleeved top, wore my wrist bands and sneakers...I tied my hair into a messy bun then walked down stairs.

Me: I'm done.

Him: thirty minutes just to wash your face?..woman.

He spoke with his back facing me....he then turned.

Him: Rato....no.

Me: What?!

I looked at myself.

Him: leggins?.

Me: jeggings.

Him: Whatever you're changing that.

Lord I should have known..

Me: Tyson I'm tired...I can't take off this sneakers then wear them again.

Him: then I'll do it for you...but you're not walking around exposed like that.

I threw my hands in the air to show defeat.

We walked back to the room and he undressed

me and dressed me back in a pair of jeans.

Him: You look gorgeous.

I rolled my eyes at him.

Me: Whatever...let's go.

We went into a restaurant and had lunch over a light conversation.

I didn't realise how hungry I was until we had to wait for our order.

It finally arrived and we ate then head back home.

On our way around the mall we bumped into some lady....who looked more my age, dark skinned and had a really wide beautiful smile.

Her: We meet again.

She directed that to Tyson.

Him: emm Hi.

He didn't notice her until she spoke.

Her: Everytime I meet you you're always with beautiful female beings, Hi...you must be Candy.

I looked at Tyson then back at her.

Me: you spoke to my daughter?.

Her: Yes...she's really adorable.

Me: I know hey.

There was awkward silence for a while.

Me: You said you are?.

Her: Zoe.. my name is Zoe....I met your husband the other time he was with the little one.

Me: oh I see...nice meeting you.

Her: like wise.

She walked away leaving me and Tyson standing.

Me: what was that about?

Him: beats me.

I smiled.



Me: looks like some has a fan.

He chuckled.

Me: What?.

Him: you're crazy.

Me: You met days ago and she still remembers the names?.

Him: Yeah that's pretty strange.

I laughed.

Him: What's funny?.

Me: She likes you.

We walked out holding hands laughing.

Me: Baby.

Him:mhh.

We had just parked home...it was a little dark outside.

Me: You have an admirer.

I started laughing and ran inside the house.

MamaD: wooooo!.....Minnie is gone and now we have to deal with another one.

I laughed touching my mouth.

Me: Hey Mah.

She looked at me from head to toe then walked away.

Tyson walked inside with plastics.

Me: I love you.

Him: I don't love you.

Me: does that mean you're dead?...oh my God maybe your admirer was a serial killer and he killed my husband.

I acted like I was crying.

Him: Rato you're crazy you know that?.

Me: Yeah yeah and so I've heard.

I laughed some more while walking away.

We were now having dinner around the

table...we weren't feeling like cooking so we decided to order in.

I suddenly felt pains on my abdominal area...wasn't that sharp though but it was a little painful.

I put my hand and started rubbing my stomach.

Tyson: You're okay Rato?.

Everyone looked at me.

I yawned.

Me: Yes...I'm just a little tired....I think I'll go lie down.

Tyson: come!.

He stood up and walked me to the bedroom.

Weeks passed and turned into a month.

Things were still very much good in my family...I was getting huge though but nevertheless I loved it.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*64\*\*\*\*\*

[Zoe]

I was at home with Walter shouting at me.

Him: Damn you Zoe.

Me: I tried but...maybe we should forget about them.

Him: That's just bullshit....I'm going to get them even if it's the last thing I do.

Me: it's been a damn month but I still haven't found something.

Him: That's because you're useless.

Me: excuse you?..

He turned yo look at me....he saw that he was being mean.

Him: sorry that was out of line.

Me: way out of line...

Him: But Zoe you're the best...seduce one of them and maybe we can get what we want.

Me: I tried that...the Lawyer and the Lecturer are happily married...they're way too committed.

Him: what about the docter?.

Me: Are you crazy?....that one is way too crazy he'll just put a bullet through my skin for just looking at him.

He was getting more and more angry...one thing about Walter is that he don't take defeat easily well that's because he's always got what he wants.

Him: There has to be another way.

Me: I don't know but for now all we've tried is not working.

Him: I was hoping we'd catch them before Christmas.

He banged hard on the door frame.

I really wanted to help him and I tried but I was not going to risk my life any further for his ass.

~

~

[Candice]

Visiting Zach's mother was not that bad after all....she's not that much of a social person but she's really a good listener.

Me: I thought about what you said last night.

Her: about spending Christmas here?.

Me: Yes and I really appreciate it but...

Her: you want to go back home?.

I nodded and she smiled.

Me: actually a friend of mine is on her way to pick me up.

Her: I'm happy to hear that....you and Zach have

your whole life together don't let a lousy mistress come between the two of you.

Me: Yeah and about that...I really need to teach that woman respect...

She laughed shaking her head.

Her: just don't get extreme with her....Zach is the one who cheated here.

Me: I know.

I let out a sigh.

Her: so when are you telling him the good news?

I smiled brushing my not showing yet tummy.

Me: If I had things my way I'd never tell him.

She widened her eyes.

Her: You know he's my son right?.

I chuckled.

Me: I'm kidding but he has to get rid of the side dish first before he gets to rejoice about our

junior on the way.

I smiled.

Her: I can't believe I'm finally going to be someone's granny.

She hugged me.

Her: Come I'll make you something to eat..

Me: No let me make you something to eat....I can't sit down while you're...

She cut my sentence.

Her: Nonsense...I want to spoil you and besides you're going home today so let me.

Me: Well if you keep doing this I might not go back after all.

We both laughed as she went to prepare a meal for both of us.

Well after it all...I was now on my way back home. I didn't have my car with me so I asked someone for a favour. When I got there I first



went to the restaurant where I saw Zach and his mistress...I just wanted to warn her to stay away from my husband and I really hope she listens because if she doesn't...oh Lord I don't even want to think about what I'll do to her.

Me: Hi...I need a little help from you.

I was talking to the security at Reeta's restaurant.

Him: hi how can I help you.

Well I'm a regular at the shop so some of the staff know me....and Zach.

Me: I know this might be too much but I need a camera footage of the...

Before I could even finish my sentence he cut me.

Him: I'm sorry but I..

Me: it's really important...you know me I wouldn't put you in a position without a valid reason.

He looked at me shaking his head.

I spent minutes begging him but he was having none of it.

Me: please...I..

I started tearing up.

I used the emotional blackmail on him....it was my last hope.

Him: What is this about anyways?.

Me: I can't tell you that but it is really important.

Him: I don't even work on that department.

He was starting to soften up.

Me: I'm sure you have a friend whom you can talk to...you know someone who can get me the footage.

He sighed and asked me to follow him after he told the other security to cover for him.

Well I got what I wanted which was her face so that I can be able to trace who she was...and it

wasn't that hard tracking her....which I find strange because she wasn't a public figure.

Me: Zoe Hadebe huh!.

I said to my self as I was going through her page.

~

~

[Venus]

Christmas...Christmas Christmas!...everything was all about Christmas even Minnie decided to spend the week at Amanda's house because they had a Christmas tree and we didn't...well You can't blame me with all this pregnancy it is so easy to forget such things.

I had just got home from work and I found my handsome husband in the kitchen doing God knows what..

Tyson: Here baby taste this.

I opened my mouth and he fed me.

Me: It has mint?.

He nodded.

Him: you don't like it?.

Me: It's not that bad...it's just that the mint is...

He looked at me.

Me: I don't know but it's not for me.

Him: I give up.

Me: You should....stop trying to change my cravings even I can't control them.

He chuckled.

Him: But baby.

Me: No....future here wants a peanut buttered bread, spinach, wors and chocolate ice cream ....that's what we're sticking to.

He sighed.

Him: that's really not a problem but when it's

eaten all at once baby that's disgusting.

Me: Honey I just got home I have not time to be arguing about my cravings.

I kissed his cheek and walked out.

I took my shoes off and threw myself on the bed without changing my clothes.

I was woken up by Tyson moving me.

I slowly opened my eyes and noticed I was almost naked..

Me: you stripped me.

He chuckled.

Him: get back to sleep.

Me: what time is it?.

Him: it's minutes after ten pm..why?.

I yawned.

Me: I'm hungry.

Him: are you serious?.

I rolled my eyes at him.

Me: I don't play with food.

I got out of bed and went to the kitchen to make a sandwich...I had it with an apple juice.

When I was done I went back to the bedroom, Tyson was fast asleep.

I jumped over to my side of the bed and tried sleeping but I couldn't.

Me: Bongani.

I gently shock him.

Me: Baby.

Him: Rato....

He balanced his head on the pillow.

Him: are you okay?.

Me: I can't sleep..

I leaned over and gave him a baby kiss.

He closed his eyes...my baby was really tired.

Me: Baby.

Him: okey I'm up.

He turned and laid on his back and I put my head on his chest.

Him: Woman you're troublesome.

Me: You woke me up.

Him: whatever Palesa.

I giggled.

Me: sorry.

Him: it's okey....

He kissed the top of my head while brushing my hair.

Him: want me to tell you a story?.

I giggled.

Me: I'm trying to sleep here so no thank you.

He chuckled.

Him: Are you trying to say I can't tell a bedtime

story?

Me: You can baby you can but I prefer you don't.

Him: well stay awake on your own then....I'm sleeping.

Me: Don't you dare Bongani.

I pushed him and he laughed.

We talked for hours before I passed out...I was woken up by cramps....

I sat up straight and started rubbing my belly.

I was failing to understand what could be wrong because I had just went for my check up the other week and everything seemed fine...

Me: Mhh.

I moaned the pain silently trying by all means not to wake Tyson up but it got so sharp I felt like I was losing my mind.

Me: Goooosh!...ahhh.

Tyson was woken up by my hand accidentally



balancing on his face.

Him: Rato.

Me: God please no.

I said a silent prayer in my heart...

I was now in tears...between the pain and the fear I had...I felt like my heart was going to stop on me.

Him: ..hey hey Rato...what's wrong?.

Me: Tyson!!!!!!....ahh!....ouch!

All the sleepiness on his face was gone.

The pain got stronger and stronger ..it came to a point where I couldn't handle it.

Him: I'm taking you to the hospital.

I wasn't that dark outside in fact it wasn't even dark.

Tyson was all rushing on the road...good thing MamaD came with because I really needed her there.

Tyson: Damn it!.

He banged hard on the steering.

MamaD: Bongani...

We both raised our head up and saw a convoy of cars standing in front of us...not only that but there another behind us.

Him: we're stuck!.

I felt wetness on my thighs and I peeped to find that I was bleeding...I started crying louder...and the pain got sharper.

Me: it's...I'm..

I sobbed loudly.

Me: I'm bleeding.

Tyson got out and came to us at the back...he kneeled outside touching my tummy.

He was getting frustrated with every minute that passed.

Him: Baby...it's daddy, I don't know what's going

on.....God damn it....I don't know what is going on but you're hurting mommy...I need you to stop that please do it for daddy...

Instead of the pain getting better it got stronger...MamaD was busy rubbing my back.

Me: Mah....I'm losing my baby.

I swear I literally felt it de-attache from my uterus...

MamaD: Don't think like that.

Me: It's painful Mah...I can't... I can't lose my baby...ahh!!!!.

MamaD: Dear God please save them..

please Lord Sabboth...please.

I looked at Tyson who felt hopelss and powerless.

He took his phone out and dialed Zach..

Him: Zach...I need the quickest route to the nearest hospital...Yes I'm stuck here on N2-03.

He dropped the call and looked at me

Him: I'll get you to the hospital Rato I need you to hang in there.

Me: I'm sorry.

I don't know why I said that but I felt like saying it...I made my peace with it...it's was baby number five after all.

It came to a point where I couldn't cry anymore I was tired...I just closed my eyes and handed it all to God...he is in charge of my life after all..

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*65\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

The minute I opened my eyes I saw Tyson siting next to me on the hospital bed...I looked deep in

his eyes and all I saw was hurt...he looked broken and hopeless.

I cleared my throats.

Me: Em Baby.

Him: Rato....want something to drink?.

I looked at his hand and he had a gun.

Before I could ask him Amanda walked in with MamaD holding cups with coffee.

Amanda: You're awake.

She flashed a faint smile and I smiled back.

MamaD: Here's coffee Bongani....how are you baby?.

I raised my shoulders.

Tyson took the coffee and kept on looking at it.

Me: Mah.

She came my side and sat next to Tyson.

Me: Did I...what...?

I swolled hard.

MamaD: We're still waiting baby...Skhumbuzo is working on it.

I nodded.

Me: Where's Minnie and Lwazi?.

Amanda: They're outside with Uncle Zach.

Me: I don't wish to be him right now.

I smiled

The mood was so dull I just figured we'd do with a small joke or something.

MamaD: Maybe we should go and help him....Zach.

Amanda: oh yes...

Amanda patted on my shoulder.

Her: I sent Candice a text I'm sure she's on her way.

I nodded with a smile.

They all walked out and It was only me and Tyson left in the room.

Him: Are you tired?.

I nodded.

Me: A little but at least the pain has stopped.

Him: I'm sorry you went through the pain alone.

I took his hand in mine.

Me: It's okey...what's that for?.

I was referring to the gun he was holding.

Him: this...

he held the gun up.

Him: it was for motivation.

He put it away.

Me: Motivation?.

Him: The docter wouldn't let Skhumbuzo be the one who attend you.

I chuckled.

Me: How did I get here anyway?.

Him: I carried you.

I chuckled again but noticed he was serious.

Me: You carried me all the way here?!.

Him: Zach met me halfway.

Me: mhh.

Him: you're sure you don't want something to drink?...water?.

Before I could answer Skhumbuzo walked in holding a file Tyson and I looked at him eagerly.

The fact that he looked so serious wasn't helping at all.

Tyson: Skhumbuzo?!.

Skhumbuzo looked at me then Tyson...He then looked at me again and flashed a semi-smile.

Skhu: We're all good.

Tyson and I sighed loudly at once.



Me: so My baby is okey?.

He nodded and tears just rolled down my face.

Tyson: and the pain??...why was she in pain?.

Skhu: The pain probably came from her uterus expanding to accommodate the babies...that's why she was bleeding.. part of her uterus wall was towing because of the adjusting.

Me: whoa!...wait did you say babies?.

He nodded.

Tyson: as in like twins?.

Skhu: no..not really.

Me: What then triplets?.

Skhu: Try Quads.

Me: What?!....four babies?

I looked at Tyson and he had this wide smile and still looked shocked at the same time.

~

~

[Candice]

I don't know why would this Zoe woman be after my husband when she has her own...I just don't get it.

I was at the mall where she was meeting with some chick....yep I hacked her emails and found out she was meeting someone here exactly one minute from now.

I was sitting at the restaurant drinking water waiting for her to show up.

Luckily I didn't wait that long and she came first before her meeting, giving me enough time to go talk to her.

Me: Oh hi can I sit down.

I pulled the chair and sat before she gave me an answer.

Zoe: Emm okey...please sit.

She was being sarcastic.

Zoe: Sorry but I'm expecting someone.

Me: oh I'll be quick trust me...listen I need you to stay away from my husband.

She chuckled.

Her: Your husband?.

Me: This is the first and last time I'm going to say this to you....stay away from him.

Zoe: why don't you ask him to stay away from me.

She said that with a smirk.

That statement gave me an idea that she knows me and if she does she'd know what I'm capable of.

I stood up and went to her, she also stood up as I got closer and closer to her.

Me: You're pretty....very pretty.

I brushed her cheek with my thumb and she

moved back a little...scared.

Me: You don't want me to ruin all of this just because you couldn't listen when you were warned.

She breath out.

Me: Stay away from my husband.

I took my phone from the table and walked away.

I really hope she listens to me otherwise hell will break loose.

I got outside and checked my phone to find several missed calls from Amanda...there was also a text saying Venus is in hospital...I texted her asking for the name of the hospital and took a cab there after she texted me back.

I was praying all the way...praying for everything to be okey..Lord knows she's been through a lot.

I was releaved to find everyone jolly when I got into the ward.

Me: Knock knock!.

Everyone turned to look at me....Venus was smiling with tears on her face.

She opened her arms and I went over and hugged her.

Me: Are you okay?.

Tyson moved to give me space.

Venus: I'm good...look at you, you look beautiful.

I smiled.

Me: Thank you...you're not too bad yourself.

She pushed me and we laughed.

Amanda: well guess what...she's not carrying one...not two not three but four babies.

I looked at her all shocked.

Me: Really?!.

Venus: It's going to be a long journey.

I hugged her again.

Me: wow!...congratulation.

Her: Thank you babe.

We heard Lwazi laughing and we all turned.  
Zach was tickling him.

Amanda: Candice.

I looked at her

Me: What?.

They both looked at me with begging eyes.

I let out a sigh and went to Zach..

Me: Hi.

Him: Hi.

Me: Can we talk?.

We moved a bit far from everyone.

I cleared my throat.

Me: You're good with kids.

Him: mhh.

There was awkward silence for a while.

Me: I know you're going to make a great dad one day.

Him: yeah one day.

I got a bit closer.

Me: How about in seven and a half months.

He raised his head looking at me with quizical eyes.

Him: Are you saying?.

I nodded.

He moved a few steps backwards...He had his hand on his eyes.

I moved closer as he moved back...He finally stopped and looked at me.

Him: You're not kidding right?.

I shock my head No!.

He hugged me and span me around while

kissing me all over my face.

Tyson: Hey watch out.

Skhu: What are we celebrating?

Amanda: They finally saw that what they were doing was total madness.

Zach put me down and kissed my cheek then looked at them.

Zach: I'm going to be a father.

Venus: Woaw...wow! congrats.

Everyone was cheering and I had the widest smile ever...

It was a happy moment.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*66\*\*\*\*\*



[Venus]

After Skhumbuzo ran all the nessecary tests he let me go home but we were both a little worried though if I was going to manage with four babies inside me...it increased pressure on my side but on the other hand I was happy to be home, I was also so excited about Christmas which was now only in few days to come.

We were sitting in the lounge with Tyson and Minnie playing with my belly.

Minnie: Okey this has to be Minnie junior.

Tyson chuckled.

Him: How do you know that?.

Me: I'm their old sister so I know them better.

I laughed and Minnie looked at me.

Her: Stop moving Candy see now Minnie the second is crying.

She was so serious I couldn't help but

laugh...she named them all and each name had "Minnie" in it.

Me: Okey I'm sorry baby.

She laid her head just below my belly and I brushed her hair.

Tyson: I think they like their sister.

Minnie: Of course they do...mommy when they're born I will be the one who bath them and they should come to my school too so that my friends can meet them.

Tyson: someone is excited.

He looked at me and we laughed.

Me: Don't worry baby the minute I give birth to them they're all yours.

Her: And they shouldn't call me by my name...I'm older then them.

I giggled.

Me: of course baby.

Tyson: and you will change their nappies and clean after their vomit?.

Minnie: eww Tyson....!

Him: What?!...they are your babies.

Minnie: But I can't clean vomit or change nappies I'm young.

Tyson and I laughed.

Minnie: When are they coming out anyways?.

Me: Five months from now.

She turned and cupped my belly with her small hands.

Her: listen brothers or sisters or bo...

Tyson cut her sentence.

Him: Siblings.

Minnie: yes...siblings, that was Tyson by the way your daddy.

Him: And your daddy too.

I giggled.

Minnie: Tyson you're disturbing us....we're talking here.

I chuckled as Tyson sighed.

Minnie: Sorry about that...I was saying, I want you guys to stay in there until you learn how to clean after yourself okey?.

I laughed then moved her from me.

Me: You're a bad sister.

Minnie: what did I do?.

Me: You don't want to help them out.

Minnie: I will help them with their homeworks and all that...

Me: Your daughter is silly Tyson.

I said that while standing up.

Minnie: Where are you guys going?.

Me: to the bedroom....Don't follow us.

Minnie: But they Want to play with their sister!

I chuckled.

Me: Don't follow us Minenhle Khumalo.

I heard her giggling all the way up.

I was a bit tired and I felt itchy so I decided to take a warm bubble bath...Lord knows I missed it.

Tyson walked inside the bathroom while I was sitting on the tub with my head facing up and my eyes closed.

Him: you seem relaxed.

I opened my eyes.

Me: This feels so good.

He chuckled, I looked at him and he was smiling.

Me: what?.

He went and sat on the toilet sit.

Him: I'm just thinking about....past events. I

remember bathing you the time you got shot.

I smiled.

Me: It was a crazy night....I can't believe I almost died.

Him: Drama queen...only your arm was hit.

I rolled my eyes at him.

Me: either way I wouldn't have got shot if you gave me Amanda's number at the function.

Him: What?!..It's not my fault you was married to a crazy ass Max.

We both laughed.....

Never in my life had I thought I'd be able to talk about Max and have no emotions at all...the feeling was awesome.

Me: What?....you also dated a crazy ass chick who put korobela on you.

Him: Korobela?

Me: yeah...I remember the time you saw her I

thought you was going to have a fit.

He chuckled.

Him: You're exaggerating.

Me: It's true.

Him: Well I also remember you kissed me  
infront of her.

I looked away....actually blushed.

Me: I was trying to help you.

Him: and you did.

We both looked at each other for a while.

Right there in his eyes I found out how my heart  
beats for him and only him and how much I  
really love him.

Me: You know I knew you were going to be mine.

He looked at me.

Me: And all I wanted was to make you happy.

Him: I am happy.

Me: Then I am happy too.

He flashed a side smile.

Him: Come I'll help you out.

I got up with his help, he wrapped the towel around my body and carried me to the bedroom.

~

~

[Candice]

I was in the kitchen peeling pears...they were the only thing I could eat around the house, I guess Zach wasn't doing an groceries since I was gone.

He stood behind me with his hands wrapped around me.

Me: I think we need to go shopping.

He planted kissed on my exposed back.

Him: mhh.



I giggled because it was ticklish.

Me: Stop!.

He turned me and made me face him.

Him: write down what you need and I' get it for you.

Me: you'll get it as in like you'll go to the shops yourself?!.

He nodded and I chuckled. Zach hates shopping.

Me: I never thought I'll see the day, one should get pregnant more often.

Him: I wouldn't mind that.

I pushed him a little.

Me: Baby.

He looked at me.

Me: Please don't get mad.

Him: what did you do now?.

I started playing with my fingers.

Him: Candice?.

Me: I went to see Zoe well not went but I talked to her...in person.

Him: Who's Zoe?.

Me: The girl I saw you with at the restaurant.

He sighed.

Him: You shot her?.

I shock my head no.

Him: so you guys just talked?.

Me: I did most of the talking.

Him: Baby I'm not dating that...

I cut his sentence.

Me: I know.

Him: You do?.

Me: Yes I believe you.

He flashed a smile.

Me: and besides she's not your type..she's beautiful and all that but not your type.

He chuckled

Him: who's my type then?

I looked down smiling.

Me: You're looking at her.

Him: Yes My crazy pregnant type of a wife.

I laughed as he lifted me up.

Me: But on a serious note I'll let go of this if you promise to stay away from her.

Him: that goes without saying.

Me: Good..and she should also stay away from you and focus on her cop husband.

Him: and you focus on your handsome sexy husband.

I laughed.

Me: I love you man.

Him: I love you more woman.

~

~

[Zoe]

Me: Are you being serious right now Walter?.

Him: What?.

Me: I had a woman threatning me to stay away from her husband.

He clicked his tongue.

Him: Her husband is useless anyways.

Me: I'm out of this.

Him: what?...why?.

Me: Walter we're going after thee most respected gangsters...that is basically signing our death certificate.

Him: Baby.

Me: Don't baby me....I want out Walter.

Him: Nothing will happen to you.

Me: Do you know that crazy IT woman?....she killed Stillo the notorious township gangster, he was shot 26 times but survived..it only took her one bullet and he died.

Him: you did a research on her?.

Me: She thinks I'm having an affair with her husband of course I did.

Him: But baby you're also tough, you've dealt with far worse situation..

Me: Walter.....I can't.

He sighed and came closer.

Him: It's okey I get it.

I wanted to help him but not get killed in the process, it was his case so he had to do it on his own.

Him: I'll find another way....maybe threaten them.

Me: That's crazy.

Him: It's my only option.

I knew he was crazy enough to actually consider his idea.

Me: Fine...I'll help you.

Him: Really?.

I ain't trying to be a widow at my age so I guess  
If I could try harder we'd get what we want.

~

~

[Venus]

Time went by fast..I was now six months pregnant, going on seven.

I was laying my head on top of Tyson's chest after our steamy session....he had me moaning his name out loud.

Me: Oh...Look at the time.

Him: I thought you said you're off duty.

Me: I am...I'm meeting with the girls for drinks.

Him: When?.

Me: Thirty minutes from now.

Him: cancel and tell them you're sick.

Me: I can't...I have to get ready.

I stood up and went for a quick shower...once I was done I had Tyson driving me there.

Me: Girls..sorry I'm late.

Tyson: ladies.

He hugged and kissed their cheeks.

Me: Thank you baby.

I said as he pulled the chair for me.

Amanda: We'll drop her off thank you bye.

We laughed.

Me: Bye baby.

He gave me a baby kiss and I watched him as he walked away.

Amanda: Stop that.

Me: What?.

Her: Looking at my brother like she's a hot delicious drumstick.

Candice: You're crazy Amanda.

Me: Please tell her.

Amanda: Are you ganging on me?.

Candice: I'm just saying she can stare all she wants and make sure every one knows he's taken....before you have to deal with side dishes.

I chuckled.

Me: I told you Zach is not cheating on you.

Her: I know...I just wish this Zoe chick could back off before I make her.

Amanda: Who's Zoe?



Me: That sounds familiar....is that the lady who's been nagging him?.

Her: Yes she is.

Me: tall, dark skinned, wide smiles with dimples?.

Her: You know her?

Amanda: What's going on?

Me: she's been hitting on Tyson too.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*67\*\*\*\*\*

Short

[Venus]

Amanda: what are you guys trying to say?

Me: can all of this be a coincidence?

Candice: I doubt it.

Amanda: Venus?...Candice?.

Me: Tyson has this girl who've been hitting on him and I thought it was just an innocent crush that will fade away eventually but it turns out she has likes for Zach too.

Candice: She's up to something...

She said as she stared into the sauce bottle battling with her thoughts.

Me: Do you have her picture?

Candice: No...unfortunately not on my phone, it's on the drive back at home.

Amanda stood up.

Me: Where are you going?.

Amanda: I need to see the woman who could be a threat to us.

We all stood up after they paid for they drinks.

The drive to Candice's house was long, maybe

it's because my curiosity got the better of me.  
I was driving with Candice and Amanda was following us with her car.

Me: Can I have some water?.

I asked as we got inside Candice's house.

I was getting nervous...could be hormones but I just feared for my husband.

Her: I'll get it for you.

Amanda: No, you go get the drive I'll get the water for her.

We did just that....Candice returned and she showed us the picture.

Me: oh my God it's her.

I put both my hands on my mouth.

Amanda: what is the meaning of this?

Candice: She might be up to something....the question is what?.

Amanda: Venus...are you okey?

Me: Yes I'm okey....it's just.

Before I could finish my sentence Zach walked in with about seven gang members..Skhumbuzo and Tyson included....they stopped talking when they saw us.

Zach: Ladies...sorry to disturb I didn't know you'll be back as yet.

Skhumbuzo went to Amanda...kissed her cheek then squeezed it.

Tyson: is everything okay?.

He looked at me.

Tyson: I mean I just dropped you off a few minutes ago.

Me: Yes everything is okey...emm.

I cleared my throats as they made themselves comfortable around the lounge.

Me: We have something to tell you.

I looked at the ladies then back to the guys.....they were waiting eagerly.

Candice: It's Zoe.

Zach sighed.

Candice: We think she's up to something.

Tyson: wait a minute you know her?!...

Tyson looked at me.

Me: She's been hitting on Zach too...that's why we think she's up to something....all of this can't be a coincidence.

Skhu: So the two of you have a same girl hitting on you at the very same time?.

He looked at Tyson and Zach

Tyson: from what I've just heard, yes.

Skhumbuzo flinched his fingers.

Him: how did I miss that one....she's probably looking for an easier target.

Zach and Tyson looked at each other.

Zach: What can she possible want with us.

Tyson: I don't think it's just about us...I think the whole gang is involved judging from he patterns.

Zach: But why?.

Zach walked around the room.

Candice: Oh and her husband is a cop.

Everyone looked at Candice like she just ordered the world to end.

Skhu: shit!.

Tyson: ladies can you excuse us?.

Amanda: What are you...,?

Skhu: baby excuse us.

We all stood up and left....leaving the guys with their serious talk.

~

~

[Tyson]

Two day after, we've been monitoring the Zoe character...had her followed and did a research on her but nothing we found was useful or suspicious.....we kept on meeting dead ends.

Zach: Bingo!.

Me: found something?.

Him: on the girl unfortunately no but as for the husband...he's not only a cop, he's a secret agent, works for the state.

Me: What?!.

Him: He uses his wife as cover.

Me: messed up shit....so he's after us?.

He clicked once more on the keyboard.

Him: I think it's time we found out.

He took his phone out and called Zoe

Zach: now....yes, if you don't mind.....okey thankx.

He dropped the call then looked at me.

Him: We should get going...we've got confrontations to make.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*68\*\*\*\*\*

[Zach]

The minute we got to the parking lot where we were to meet up with Zoe, Tyson stayed inside his car while I waited for Zoe. She arrived a few minutes later than me...She parked her car and came inside mine.

Her: Why are we meeting in such a doggy place?.

I looked at her, trying to search her soul.

Me: I don't want to risk people seeing us.



Her: By that you mean your wife?.

I chuckled then looked at her.

Me: you can say that.

She smiled....it's only then I realised that her wide smiles were all fake.

Her: I think I like the sound of that.

Me: How about we take this somewhere more private and comfortable?.

Her: like a hotel room?.

Me: No.. that's not private enough.

Her: What then, your home?.

I looked at her then cleared my throats.

Me: emmm..come you'll see.

Her: ohhhhhhkey!.

I started the car then drove to the warehouse. I saw Tyson's car following us and Zoe didn't have even a slight idea that this could be her

last day breathing.

Me: Come, I'll show you around.

She got out and I led her inside.

Her: Emm why are we here?.....what's...?.

I cut her sentence.

Me: I'm a gangster.

I looked at her trying to find a reaction.

Me: I'm involved in a lot of messed up shit...shit that can either get me arrested or killed.

That took her by surprise.

Her: Why.....are you telling me...all of this.

Skhu: Because we thought that's what you want.

He said as he walked in with Tyson following him.

Zoe was getting nervous with every second that passed by.

Her: What are you guys talking about?.

Tyson: Cut the act Zoe...Just tell us what is it that you fucken want.

Tyson got close to her and she moved a few steps backwards.

Me: So....talk!.

Her: Maybe I should call my husband...he...he's the one who wants...

Skhumbuzo banged the table and she jumped in fear.

Her: Please....He'll explain it himself and and..please don't kill me.

Skhu: you look tougher then you're actually are.

She was starting to tear up.

Me: Here...

I gave her my phone.

Me: Don't try anything stupid.

She dialed his number and called him.

It took him about an hour to get to a garage where we had DK fetching him to the warehouse.

DK made sure he was with no one and had no gun before he got inside the house.

Zoe: Baby...

She looked at us then at her husband.

Him: Are you okey?.

Hr directed that to Zoe.

Skhu: okey cut the crap.....you sit down.

He went and sat down next to her.

Him: I know why I'm here so I'll just get to the point....my name is Walter and I'm an agent currently working on the Namibia case.

We looked at each other.

Tyson: What's that got to do with us?

Him: I've been following you for two years now..

Skhu: you mean trying to lock us up for two years.

Him: something like that....There's a huge drug syndicate in Namibia...it has taken lives of innocent people even children are affected....a new drug called Repunzel "rep" in short... it messes with your brain cells, completely shut down your lungs and breathing system if overdosed and it's highly addictive.

Me: What's that got to do with us.

Zoe: The drug is initially found in Namibia.

Tyson: so you think we're involved?..

Walter: In My two years following you I learned that you don't work in such a way...and you also respect the community and the children that's why you don't sell drugs.

Skhu: that don't explain why you here....in fact it explains why you shouldn't be here.

Zoe: We know Antonio is the new ring

leader....we, he wants him.

Me: Then he must go get him.

Him: that's the thing, I can't....I have lost more men that I usually would in a year.

Tyson: that's not our problem.

Zoe: This is really important....come on think of the kids affected.

Me: If Mr Walter there can do his job all of this can be over.

Skhu: Yes..that's not our problem to worry about.

We all stood up.

Tyson: May this be the last time i see you.

He directed that to Zoe who just looked down.

Walter: at least think about it.

Me: There's nothing to think about....you couldn't be man enough to ask us in the first place...instead you sent your floozy wife to fight

your battles.

I clicked my tongue.

Skhu: Five minutes to get out before I pop your brains.

They looked at each other then walked out...but Walter stood halfway.

Walter: I've worked really hard to stop now...and I'll make sure I seal this case.

With that said he walked out.

~

~

[Venus]

I was sitting at Amanda's watching a movie and eating popcorn.

Her: Want some more?

Me: No...I think I've had enough.

She looked at me.

Her: did you just say no to food???

I threw the cushion at her.

Me: Don't do that.

She tried to stop laughing but she couldn't.

Me: ohh!.

Her: Are you okey?.

Me: Yes I just felt...ohh!.

Her: Venus.

Me: I'm in a bit of pain...actually it's not a bit.

Her: what?...like labour??!.

I looked at her.

Me: I think so....is it possible?....I'm only seven months....ohh!.

Her: ohh owk think Amanda think...

She was all over the place.

Her: okey just sit her...



She lifted my feet and put it on the sofa.

Her: try breathing in and out...

I started breathing.

Her: You're doing good.

Me: ohhh!...ahh!....where the hell is Tyson?!

Her: I'll call him.

she took her phone and called....she hung up then came to me.

Her: I'll give you something to help you with the pains.

Me: Are you sure that's the right thing to do?.

I wasn't trying to question her ethics...I just couldn't take any risks.

I continued screaming in pain.

A few minutes later Tyson walked in running....being followed by Skhumbuzo.

I was in more pain and I couldn't take it, even

after the injection the pain remained.

I explained everything to Skhumbuzo and he did a check up on me.

Skhu: it's not time yet.

Me: What is that suppose to mean.

Skhu: I'm scared you might have to go through a c-section.

Me: What?..why?.

Skhu: you might not be able to carry them all until you're due..

Me: But I've been doing good...eating good, exercising and stayed away from stress.

Skhu: it's more physically....your body is under pressure.

I looked away then back at him.

Me: Will they manage being born prematurely?...I mean their lungs are not fully developed for them to breath on their own.

Skhu: that's the risk we'd have to take....I can have them monitors.

Me: No.

Tyson: Rato.

Me: No Tyson...Skhumbuzo I want to keep them inside for as long as I can...I can't take such risks..it's too much.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*69\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

Days turned into weeks and Venus was heavy and doing great. Sometimes I feel for her having to physically go through all the struggles.

Walter on the other hand surprisingly, he listened and stayed away from us though we

still kept a close eye on him.

We were having breakfast in bed with my gorgeous pregnant wife.

Her: I'll have that.

She extended her fork into my plate and took my sausage.

Me: that's not yours.

Her: I know, that's why I'm not going to eat it....they will.

Me: woman you had three of those and I had one.

She giggle.

Her: Man how can you put three when there's five of us?.

I sighed and she giggled more.

I'm glad her cravings changed because they were so unbearable.

I'm also happy that she fought for our kids to

remain inside because she's doing so good.

Me: So I was suppose to make what?...five?.

Her: you said it baby.

she said that standing up.

Me: are you on your way to make more?

She rolled her eyes.

Her: I'm going to the bathroom.

She stopped halfway through the room and looked at me.

Me: What?.

Her: Tyson?!.

I followed her eyes down to the floor and it was wet.

Her: My water just broke.

Me: okey calm down baby.

I went to her and led her to sit down on the bed.

Me: Are you in pain?

She shock her head no...she had her lips slightly parted, more like amazed.

Me: emm we need to get to the hospital....whe re's the bag Rato?.

She pointed at the closet and I quickly went for it.

Me: Will you be able to walk?.

Her: Tyson...

She held on to my arms.

Her: Baby I'm scared...I.

I cut her sentence.

Me: It's okey Rato, I'm here....I'm here.

she noddod then we went out.

Me: Mamzo!!!!!!....Mamzo....Mah!.

I was shouting and she came running.

Her: Yes...what's going on?.

Me: I'm taking Rato to the hospital.

Her: Are you in labour?....

Venus: I think so Mah, my water just broke.

Her: I'll come with you.

Venus: Ahhh..,OK now I'm in pain.

I got her arm balanced on mine and took her out.

~

~

[Venus]

I spent hours screaming and kicking...I felt like someone was shoving million sharp knives on my abdominal area.

Worse thing the nurse kept on telling me to hang in there while I wait for the doctor and Skhumbuzo was unavailable.

Tyson: Rato hang in there baby, I have someone on the way.

Me: ahh!....it's painful.

Another nurse came in, probably because of my loud screams.

Nurse: do you have your file with you.

I looked at Tyson and he rubbed his heard.

Me: no...but I'm expecting quads.

She widened her eyes.

Nurse: I think it's best we wait for the docter...mean while please try to breath okey.

Me: but.

Tyson: baby...breath.

Me: Shut up Tyson I'm not talking to you...ahh!.

He looked at me then kept shut.

Me: I was suppose to have a C-section and...

She cut my sentence.

Nurse: stay calm you're doing good.

I started breathing in and out.

Me: ohhh!...ahh..ahh!!!!



Amanda walked in running...even her jersey was almost off.

Me: Amanda!.

A nurse came in and handed her gloves.

She didn't say anything, she just wore her gloves and came towards me.

Amanda: okey babe, I need you to open wide...I want to know how close they are.

I did as told.

Amanda: We're pretty close.

Me: Ahh!.

Amanda: Tyson you can excuse us.

He looked at me and I nodded.

I'd really like for him to be here but I just felt like it's better if he isn't...I can be a cry baby when he's around.

As soon as he walked out Amanda had me pushing and breathing...I was thrilled to hear

different cries every after pushing.

By the time we got to baby number four I was dead tired.

Amanda: You're doing good honey...one last push.

I closed my eyes and breathed in then pushed.

Amanda: okey wait...I'll tell you to push again.

I waited while breathing in and out and drop sweating.

I started pushing again when she told me to.

After I heard the last cry I dozed off..I was so tired. I just told myself I'll meet them when I've had my rest.

Me: Amanda.

I said with my eyes half opened.

Her: Have your rest, you did very good.

She smiled and I smiled back then closed my eyes.

I don't know how long I slept but when I woke up the room was full.

Candice: wakey wakey sleepy head.

Me: Hey.

Tyson: Rato.

He came and kissed my forehead.

Tyson: how are you doing?.

Me: I'm dead tired...where are my babies.

Amanda: The docter...Gosh, Skhumbuzo is still running some test on them I'll bring them to you when he's done.

I flashed a smile.

Me: ohh, Baby....the genders?.

Tyson: Three girls and.

He gave me a baby kiss.

Tyson: a boy.

He was so excited....I flashed a smile.

Skhu: Hello mother.

Me: Perfect Timing Skhu..

He chuckled.

Skhu: don't be made, my baby was here.

Amanda: yes I was.

She folded her arms.

Me: and surprisingly she didn't cry.

She rolled her eyes at me and we all laughed.

Amanda: you should've heard your husband on the phone, he literally threatened me.

Skhu: He did what?.

Tyson: you're exaggerating Manda.

Me: either way...thank you.

She came and hugged me.

Two nurses came holding my babies...they were so tiny and adorable.

Me: ncoew...mommies little babies.

Tyson helped me.

Minnie: They are here.

She shouted standing by the door, we all turned and looked at her standing next to Zach.

Minnie: Mommy they are here.

She was so excited.

Me: Hi pumpkin.

She gave me no attention...she just went next to Tyson to look at them.

Her: Hi....emm..Tyson who's Minnie Jr?.. they all look the same now I'm confused.

She was right about that, they were the image of each other and the fact that they were all wearing blue wasn't helping.

Tyson: I don't know...I think this is, emm no....eish I don't know.

Me: I think we have to name them.

Minnie: I'll name them...I'll name them.

Amanda: No...you know nothing about names.

Minnie: Candy.

Me: Okey baby.

She smiled excitedly.

She looked at them all then named them,  
Enzokuhle, Philokuhle, Thandokuhle and  
Melokuhle.

Amanda: so much Okuhle.

Minnie: because they are one.

Tyson: I love them.

Me: Me too.

Amanda rolled her eyes and we all laughed.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever  
yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*70\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

We spent two weeks at the hospital, We wanted to make sure if my angels were going to manage breathing on their own since they were born prematurely. Having a resourceful husband came in handy, Tyson was able to pull a few strings and they let me spend the period at the hospital with them.

By the time we were good to go home everyone was waiting for us and they were so attached to Okuhles, Even Minnie requested to spend the rest of the month as a day scholar and surprisingly they allowed her at school.

We were sitting in the nursery trying to put them to sleep with Minnie's help.

Minnie: She's asleep.

she was referring to Melokuhle who was the first one out between four of them and Thando was the last one and also the only boy, Tyson's pride.

Me: Thank you Pumpkin.

She sang her to sleep.

Her: Is he asleep?.

I shock my head No, everyone was sleeping except Thando.

Tyson walked in.

Him: Princess, your food is ready.

Her: I'm not hungry.

Him: Minenhle Khumalo.

She didn't want to leave their sight.

Her: I'll eat when I get hungry.

Him: Minnie go downstairs and eat your food!.

He spoke with so much authority Minnie got scared.

She looked at me with begging eyes.

Me: it's okey baby go and eat, You can come back when you're done.



She walked out with her shoulders down...she was that disappointed.

Me: Tyson!.

Him: What?!.

I sighed then continued rocking Thando back and forth.

Tyson: You should also go and eat.

Me: I need to put Thando into bed first.

Him: He has hiccups?.

I looked at him and he was right.

Me: I'll breastfeed him.

I sat him in a comfortable position then started breast feeding him, with Tyson looking at us.

Him: Rato?!.

Me: What now?.

Him: Don't bring your breast too close you'll choke him.

I looked at him like "really"?!.... He was just being too over protective.

I finished breastfeeding Thando and luckily he fell asleep in the process. I went downstairs to join Minnie and the grannies for dinner.

MamaD: You must be tired.

I sighed.

Me: Don't ask.

She chuckled.

Her: I can only imagine, four babies at once are no child's play.

Me: oh I can manage my angels just fine...it's the father and...

I looked at Minnie.

Me: The princess I can't manage.

Minnie giggled and hid her face with her hands.

Me: Just now he just schooled me on how to breast feed...can you imagine?.

We all laughed.

Mamzo: It's pure excitement...wait until sleepless nights come.

Tyson walked in.

Me: Yes...and I'm sure daddy here will be more than happy to croasnight with them.

He chuckled then came to kiss my cheek before he sat next to me.

We continued having dinner and went to our separate bedrooms after we were done.

I took a quick shower before I got into bed. Tyson was busy with something on his PC.

Me: Goodnight Bongani.

I kissed his cheek and got inside covers...I was dead tired.

Him: goodnight Rato.

I closed my eyes and drifted to sleep.....I was woken up by small cries coming from the

nursery....it's situated next door so it's easy to hear what's going on, on that side.

I opened my eyes and Tyson wasn't next to me.

I got out of bed and found him sitting on the rocking chair trying to calm Thando down.

Me: is he okey.

I went towards them.

Him: go back to sleep Rato, I got this.

Me: are you sure?.

Him: yes....now go.

I walked out backwards.

Before I could even doze off to sleep Tyson walked in.

Him: He's asleep.

Me: Just like that?!.

He smiled.

Him: you seem surprised.

Me: it takes me close to an hour putting him to bed but you spent less than fifteen minutes.

He chuckled.

Him: Sleep Rato.

Me: it's not fair.

Him: I know hey.

He was being sarcastic.

I rolled my eyes and he laughed.

Him: I love you.

Me: I don't love you.

Him: really.

I nodded giggling.

He tried tickling me but I moved fast.

Me: I'm kidding....I love you.

Him: good...now it stays like that for ever.

I laughed.

Me: Baby you're crazy.

Him: Look who's talking.

He moved closer and cuddled me as we doze off to sleep.

~

~

Tyson]

I was woken up by a knock on the bedroom door.

Me: Minnie.

The door was opened.

Her: Aunty Candice is here to see mommy.

I stretched my arms yawning.

Me: She's asleep sweet heart....tell her to wait a bit...where's MamaD?.

Minnie: She's making coffee in the kitchen.

Me: have you eaten?.

She nodded.

Me: Brushed your teeth?.

she smiled widely showing me her teeth.

I pulled her and kissed her on the top of her head.

Me: That's my girl.

She giggled.

Me: Come let's check on Okuhles first before we go to Aunty Candice.

She smiled excitedly.

I looked at Venus who was sleeping peacefully then walked out. They were also peacefully sleeping which was the first....normally they wake up five hours after twilight.

Me: Candice.

I hugged and kissed her cheek.

She was sitting comfortably on the couch eating a sandwich.

Me: what bring you here?.

Her: what?...can't I visit my favourite couple.

I chuckled.

Her: okey we ran out of penut butter at home.

I laughed.

Me: You also eat crazy?.

Her: blame it on Zach junior here....he's an eater.

I laughed.

Me: I feel sorry for Zach....where is he anyways?

Her: he's at the mall...to get a few things.....I asked him to drop me here I couldn't wait any longer.

Me: I feel for my guy hey.

Her: he made me this way so he has to deal with it.

Venus walked in with her eyes half closed.

Venus: Gosh...what are you doing here at this



hour.

Candice chuckled.

Her: Good morning to you too.

Venus: Good morning.

She went towards the tap and got water then came to sit on top of me.

Venus: why are you eating my food.

Candice: girl you ate my food a lot of times I've never complained.

Venus rolled her eyes and I laughed.

~

~

[Zach]

I was on my way out of the mall when I bumped into Zoe, this time she was with her husband.

Me: Can't I be left to enjoy the rest of my morning.

Zoe: Hello Zach.

She said that with a smirk.

Walter pulled her close and put his arms around him, I don't know if they were showcasing their love or what...but they were very annoying.

Walter: How about you go home...organise a meeting with the rest of the gang so we can decide on how we're going to accomplish our mission.

Me: Fuck off!.

I walked away leaving him laughing along with his crazy wife.

I kept on clicking my tongue on my way to Tyson's...I was really irritated..Walter is just undermining me and there's nothing I'd like more than to set a bullet through his skull.

Tyson: Zach....thank God you're here, please take your wife...it was nice having her around but we're good now.

Me: Whatever man.

Tyson: owk...someone is in a good mood.

He looked at me and it's then that I realised I was being disrespectful.

Candice: Are you okey baby?...did something happen at the mall?.

I looked at her and smiled.

Me: I'm good baby.....can we talk privately.

I directed that to Tyson.

Him: Sure.

Venus: Want something to eat Zach?.

She shouted as we walked out.

Me: yes please!.

I shouted back.

We got inside Tyson's study but before we could talk his phone rang.

Him: excuse me.....Hello.....speaking.. what are

you doing at the station?...okey wait we're coming.

He dropped the call and looked at me.

Him: Shakes was arrested I have to go there as in like yersteday.

Me: I'm coming with you.

We drove off to the station where we found him in the interrogation room with an officer.

Officer: hey you're not supposed to be here.

Tyson: I'm his lawyer...and how dare you interrogate him in my absence?.

Officer: there's not much you can do actually...we have all the evidence we need.

Me: What evidence?

The officer looked at me.

Tyson: What evidence?.

Officer: He was caught red handed with drug... an amount of about 4KG...

We looked at Shakes.

Shakes: I'm going to kill that bitch!.

We heard an evil laugh before Walter walked in.

Walter: I'll take it from here.

The officer nodded then went out.

Shakes: you bursted!!...you set me up!!!.

Walter: I don't know what you're talking about.

Shakes: I know you did it.

Walter: It's not about what you know....it's about what you can prove.

I saw Shakes face changing.

Walter: Don't be sad...there are option like prison break.

Me: if you're talking about the shit about Namibia then you're crazy.

Shakes: I'm going to kill you.

The feeling was mutual...Walter is just a roach

that needs to be taken care of.

Tyson: you failed to listen to us when we told you to back off....

He cut him.

Him: yeah but now I have Family right here inside my cells....he might go down for 10 years minimum.

We all looked at each other.

Shakes: Don't listen to this fucker.

Walter: I'm giving you three days to decide.

He looked at us shaking his head.

Him: three days.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*71\*\*\*\*\*

[Zoe]

I was at home cooking dinner when Walter walked whistling.

I closed the pot and put the spoon away.

He wrapped his hands around my waist.

Him: hey baby.

He smashed his lips onto mine.

Me: mhh what was that for.

He flashed a smile.

Him: for being my thoughtful beautiful wife....blackmailing them, that was a winner.

I wrapped my hands around his neck as he picked me up.

Me: but baby...we have to be careful, I mean what if they retaliate and have us killed.

Him: They won't trust me...we have Shakes...and they know that the only way to free him is through me..little do they know that

after they've eliminated Antonio and got the disk they are all joining him inside.

He threw the evil laugh.

He was really feeling this case...and the progress had him all excited but I was scared for him.

Just like him no one takes defeat with a warm smile, I know they'll want to fight back and we can't afford that.

Me: All of them?.

Him: As much as I'd like to arrest even their cats and dogs...I'll have to stick to the gang members.

Me: on what charges?

Him: killing Antonio....something like a gang on a gang fighting for power.

I got off his hands and went to stand next to my point.



Him: Don't tell me you feel sorry for the fuckers.

Me: No I don't...the pregnant wife stay out of this right?

Him: She is part of the gang...sh...

I cut his sentence.

Me: Was....baby No, there's an innocent child involved.

He looked at me and I kept a straight face.

Him: we talked about this.....everyone with dirty hands gets arrested....we're saving the community.

Me: She was not pregnant then....things have changed....and don't tell me about helping the community because we all know that this is personal...you're doing this for your dirty boss.

He looked at me not believing that I've just raised my voice at him.

I switched the stove off.

Him: Really?!

Though this case is to help him regain his respect from his superiors but the main aim is to kill Antonio and find a disk Antonio is using to blackmail his boss....apparently that disk has all the dirty secret that can have him fired, arrested and killed.

Me: I understand that this is important to you but be a human for once and think....use your fucken head.

I clicked my tongue and walked out.

What he was saying really got to me...what kind of a sick animal does that....He's my husband and he's not perfect but this I won't allow. I grew up without a mother and I'm not about to be a reason why another child grows up without a mother's presence.

I got to the bedroom and laid on the bed all angry.

Walter walked in an hour later.

Him: Hey.

He came to sit next to me.

Him: okey I'm sorry I was being a jerk and unthoughtful...I know how much you relate to the situation.

I turned over and looked at him.

Me: We can't do that to the kid.

He sighed.

Him: okey, we'll focus on the guys....we're leaving the wives out.

Me: Thank you.

He pinched my cheek.

Him: now I'll have my dinner.

Me: you didn't dish up for yourself because?

Him: because I have a wife.

I chuckled...

Him: On a serious note....I hate seeing you unhappy.

Me: I'm not unhappy.

He smiled.

Him: good because I need your help....I need you to work closely with the gang...ofcouse you won't be there when we make the arrests.

Me: Baby you know I'm not about that life anymore.

Yep I was bad.....not dangerous or big...I just did what I had to do to survive.

Him: Honey please....I need someone I could trust I ha...

Me: Fine...I'll do it but if they agree to do the job.

Him: oh they will honey...I know they will.

~

~

[Tyson]

Days passed and we decided to do the job..we had no choice anyways because leaving Shakes out in the cold was not an option.

Skhu: I think this plan will come together after we've observed the house.

We were at the ware house having a final discusion before we take off.. In less then three hours.

Walter walked in wearing all black, along with his wife who had a black jacket with her hands inside the pockets.

Walter: Gentlemen...I hope you're ready.

We all looked at him.

Zoe: My team.

Skhu: your team?!.

Walter: she'll be joining you.

Skhu: That's not happening .

Walter: it is....you don't call the shots.

Skhu tried talking but I stopped him.

Me: Someone brief her on the plan.

I tapped on Skhu and signalled him and Zach to follow me as we drove home.

We came in one car because they had spent the night at my house the other night. Candice and Amanda will be staying in until we come back.

Zach: if I was talking to Santa clause...my wish would be to see Walter laying in a pool of blood with a bullet on his head.

Skhu: with his annoying wife

Me: Don't worry....every dog has it's day.

Zach: oh shit!.

Skhu: What?

We're on our way inside the house.

Him: I forgot the braai meat I promised Candice.

Skhu: oh ho! My man you're in trouble..

We laughed at him as we walked inside.

Candice: Baby.

Zach: baby I can explain.

Candice: explain what?.

She was chewing and had woks in her hands.

We all sighed and Venus smiled.

Venus: you can thank me later.

~

~

[Venus]

Having short memories when you're pregnant came in handy to Zach otherwise Candice was going to murder him.

I was really sad that Tyson was going away for God knows how long....but I've excepted it, this is him and this is what he does and besides they had good motives.

We sat around and ate while Minnie was playing with Lwazi in their bedroom...the quads were sleeping except Thando who was in MamaD's hands.

Skhu: We have to go.

I looked at Tyson and he looked at me....He was worried that I'm going to be left behind all sad and have to watch over the quads without him.

I winked and he flashed a smile.

Zach: Yes...Shakes is being realised as we speak.

Minnie walked in running...Lwazi was all giggling.

Amanda: oh Minnie...Gosh...!!.

Minnie: it's not me.

Lwazi's face was covered in a hand cream.

Amanda: it's not you?

Me: come here pumpkin.



She ran and stood next to me....she started playing with Zach's jacket.

Minnie: Uncle...

Zach: Angel.

Minnie: where's the meat you promised us.

Us: Minnie!.

She looked at us confused.

Skhu: and the drama begins.

We laughed.

Candice: it's okey....but.

Tyson: Lord save him please.

Candice looked at Tyson.

Skhu: This is our ticket to run.

They all stood up and bid goodbyes.

Candice: when you come back you're taking me out!.

She shouted

Zach: Okey baby.

They all walked out.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*73\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

I received a phone call in the earliest hours of the morning...I was so deep into sleep that I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: Dr Khumalo hello?.

Him: Venus do you have a pen near you?.

It was Skhumbuzo...

Me: No, I...wait.

Him: I don't have time you have to memorize this number....031\*\*\*\*\*...call him and tell him I

sent you, we're about to fly back there and we have injured people..got it?.

Me: Yes.

Him: as much as this is lethal but I need you to bring Candice to the airport, I'll send you the details in a minute.

He hung up, just like that.

All the sleepiness was gone..I had million thoughts in my mind like why would I have to bring Candice?...and why is it the two of us that needs to be there...I battled with my thoughts until I came up with a theory that Tyson and Zach are the injured ones.

I dialed the number and called the paramedics....I

luckily the guy responded fast and agreed to be at the airport with help.

I woke Candice up and we changed into warm clothes....I didn't tell her why Skhumbuzo asked

for us because I also didn't know..

Before we could walk out Amanda appeared.

Her: I heard voices...what's going on?.

Me: emmm...I think the guys are on their way back.

Her: So where are you two going.

I looked at Candice.

Me: Skhumbuzo called me and said I should bring Candice along.

Her: What?...why?..

Silent.

Her: Venus...what's going on?.

Me: I don't know Amanda...I'm as clueless as you.

Her: I'm coming with you.

I knew she wasn't going to let go so I let her be.

We got outside and drove off to the port.

We got there before the guys landed....so it gave us a chance to speak to the port manager and he let us in.

In a short while the paramedics also arrived.

Candice: Why are they here?...what is going!!.

Amanda: Candice calm down.

Candice: Don't tell me to calm down!...

We kept quiet and paced around until we saw them.

Skhumbuzo and Tyson made their way to the stretcher holding Zach side by side.

Candice: Zach!!!.

We all ran towards him.

Zach: (coughs)

Me: Cand...

Zach: Baby....(smiles), I love you.

He looked at Candice who had tears all over her

face.

Amanda: God No!.

Candice didn't utter any word she just looked at him with tears, she didn't even sob out loud or scream, she just looked at him.

Para: Please step aside.

They tried saving him but it was too late.

Them: Time of death 05:25am.

Amanda started screaming and Skhumbuzo went to her, held her as they both went down on the floor.

Me on the other hand, I don't know....I was still in shock.

Candice moved closer to Zach and closed his eyes with her hands, she leaned over and kissed him on his slightly opened mouth.

Candice: I love you too baby.

He was gone...he was really gone and never

coming back.

I looked at Tyson who was holding the stable Candice.

Tyson: Rato.

Tears streamed down my face.

Me: I....

Words failed me.

I turned back and had my back facing them.

I said a silent prayer asking God to accept his soul.

All of this was taking time to sink in.....After a while I felt hands touching my shoulders.

I gasped in shock.

Tyson: hey...it's okey!...it's okey.

He turned me back and hugged me.

It was then I started crying too....all of this was just too much.

~

~

[Skhumbuzo]

In all our gang only six of us survived...but Zach's death is one that my family and I won't be able to get through. I blame myself, and I know you blame me too, who wouldn't?..I know that maybe you're thinking I'm a doctor and I could've saved him but I couldn't...I tried the best I learnt in all my medical life but I couldn't save him.

Me: Baby.

Amanda has been staring outside the window all morning...she wasn't talking to anyone, she had her face wet in tears.

Her: emm..

She cleared her throat and wiped her tears.

Me: It's going to be okay.



It was really hard trying to convince her that it's going to be alright when I, on the other hand didn't believe it.

I was worried about Candice too..she took the news calmly..maybe it's because she was shocked and still trying to process that he's gone..what if she relapse or something?.

Her: Skhumbuzo..you could've taken the bullet out...or something you always carry your kit.

I brushed my head in frustration.

Me: it was way too deep...and you know an open environment could've caused an infection had I performed on him.

Her: it doesn't matter now cause...

She sobbed.

Her: He's gone.

I laid her head on my chest as she cried.

Her: I need to check on Candice....she can't be

alone at this time.

I held her hand.

Me: she's not alone...just, get some rest please.

Her: She just lost her husband for goodness sake...I can only imagine what she's going through..She's pregnant and expecting..this is suppose to be her happiness..how could this happen to her?..why now?..Damn!.

She hit me on my chest and I held both her hands.

I understand where she's coming from..She's always been afraid that one day I'll go out and never come back or come back dead..Amanda is way too emotional and at some point I thought she wouldn't manage being a doctor but surprisingly, she did.

~

~

[Venus]

I walked past my bedroom to check on Tyson.

Me: Ty...Tyson.

He turned to face me and his eyes were red, a clear evidence that he has been crying.

Me: I'm...do you..

I kept quiet and walked closer to him.

Me: Do you need anything?.

I was even scared of asking that.

Him: Please hold me.

I didn't even respond I just wrapped my hands around him and hugged him tight.

Him: I should've known...I should've known that it was a trap.

Me: A trap?.

Him: It was never about the Namibian citizens...he wanted us out so he could continue with his filth in our country....with us out of the way...nothing was stopping them.

Me: It's okey....it's okey.

He got out of my hold and moved away.

Him: No it's not...I'm going to hunt him and whoever it is that he's working for and I'm going to kill them just like I killed Antonio.

Me: You killed Antonio?!...the Russian mafia king?.

Him: They are going to pay...I swear on my late father's grave.

Me: Tyson No!

I looked at him.

Me: Just let it be.

Not that I didn't want him avenging Zach's death but I was not about to have my husband killed...whoever did this trap is clearly resourced and dangerous....I can't lose Tyson...I just can't.

Him: Let it be?!.

Me: It's dangerous!!.

Him: No it not...But I on the other hand...I'm mad angry and I'm about to kill someone.

I looked at his eyes and they were splitting fire...I got confirmation from them that he meant each and every word he uttered.

Me: What if that's not what I want....we're suppose to be moaning Zach!.

Him: And this is my way of doing just that.

Me: In that case you might as well leave me out of it.

Him: What is that suppose to mean.

Me: It means I'm not about to be a widow...if you're leaving to seek revenge then I'm leaving too...leaving you.

He looked at me amazed.

Me: and I'm taking my children with...all five of them.

I walked out after saying that....I meant every

word.

If Tyson continues with his ways...I'm leaving....I know I love him but I can't...I know I won't survive having to bury him.

I went to drink water before I went to check on Candice again.

Candice: I called Zach's mom she's on her way...I hope you don't mind accommodating her..

Me: No it's...it's okey.

Her: I just don't feel like going home..I know everything will just remind me of him.

Me: I understand.

I laid on the bed next to her.

Mamzo: You're strong child.

She smiled faintly.

MamaD: do you want something to eat?

Her: No I'm okey.

MamaD: what about Junior in there?.

Her: Okey I'll have what ever you're serving.

MamaD patted on her then walked out.

Mamzo:I'll help you.

She followed her leaving me with Candice.

There was awkward silence for a while I didn't know what to say or how to say it.

Her: When you come back you're taking me out.

She chuckled.

Me: What?.

Her: Those were my last words to him....not I love you or you're my life but "when you come back you're taking me out"...

I sighed.

Me: I know he knows you love him....and he loved you too.

Her: He did...even though I was crazy at times

but he loved me.

Me: Candice I'm sorry.

Her: I just wish he waited a bit longer to meet our son.

Tears streamed down.

Her: I should've agreed earlier.

.he would've met him.

Me: Shiii!.

I laid her on my chest as she cried.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*72\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

If asked I'd always choose respect over being feared because I really value respect.



What Walter was doing was just pure insult to my gang and I, he has no stand ordering us around like we're his little puppets. if he has cases he can't solve then he should ask his superiors to come up with resources and more men to take care of the Antonio issue.

I wish there was something we could do but all we can do now is get the job done and kill him later.

Skhu: We're here.

We got into the warehouse organised by Walter....it was huge and had separate room..the technology was very high we had to use identifications to get in.

Zach: this is one of the best.

He said as he approached the computer.

We spent the whole two days in...adjusting to our plan and finalising it.

By the looks of things...it was going well.

On day four we went out to attack but before we even got outside the house there were gunshots directed at us.

We all quickly got back inside.

Shakes: What the fuck.

Zoe: This can't be...he said...

We all looked at her and she kept quiet.

Zach: looks like we were expected.

Skhu: He set us up.

He went towards Zoe and pinned her against the wall.

Skhu: What the fuck is happening?!

DK: Skhumbuzo.

Me: Leave him!.

DK stepped back....Skhumbuzo was choking the crying Zoe.

Zoe: I swear I don't know...he assured me that

no one knew where we are and....

She sobbed loudly.

She kept on repeating the words "how could he?" and sobbed out.

~

~

[Venus]

It was a lazy day and we all weren't feeling like waking up at all.

It's been days now since the guys left and we've heard absolutely nothing from them.

The last time I talked to Tyson was when he called to say they have arrived.

I had just woke up, Minnie was at school and Lwazi in a day care.

I found Amanda making a cereal in the kitchen.

Me: Sister.

Amanda: Good morning.

I yawned and she chuckled.

Her: That tired huh?.

Me: You have no idea.

Among all the quads Thando is the more restless one and especially with Tyson not here he was giving me a very hard time.

Good thing we hired two stay-in nannies.

Her: Come join us..we're chilling in the bedroom with the old ladies.

Me: Why not.

She finished making the cereal and we walked to the bedroom.

Candice had her head rested in MamaD's thighs and she was rubbing her shoulders.

There was laughter when we got in.

Me: What's funny.

Candice: MamaD is telling us how troublesome Tyson was in his teen days.

After saying that she sat up to eat the cereal Amanda prepared for her.

Me: Mah!

She laughed.

Her: What?...Candice has to know what to expect from the boy she's carrying.

Me: But Tyson wasn't like that.

She chuckled.

Her: You don't know Bongani.

She continued telling us all the crazy events that happened and we were laughing our lungs out.

MamaD: Only my sweet baby girl was an angel.

Amanda blushed.

Me: Only because Tyson held her with Germany hands.

Amanda rolled her eyes.

MamaD: and then came Skhumbuzo.....oh God that boy drove my daughter crazy.

Me: This is interesting.

Amanda: Mah No.

MamaD: She started wearing make-up and acting all crazy.

Candice: Crazy in love.

Amanda: Okey that's enough....who's cooking?.

Me: I'll order in.

MamaD: as long as it's not sea-food.

Me: eish!

Her: ai ai...girlfriend.

We all laughed.

We spent the whole day talking and bonding.

It was time for me to put the quads into bed and I did just that...I found Candice eating raw

carrots in the kitchen when I got back.

Me: at least you're eating healthy.

She smiled but quickly frowned.

Me: Are you okay?

I went to her.

Her: Junior hasn't moved the whole day today.

She rubbed her belly.

Me: Maybe he's tired....come let's get you guys into bed.

The worry in her eyes got me worried to....I really hoped it's nothing.

I told myself that we'll ask Amanda to do a check up on her the following day.

~

~

[Tyson]

We've been stuck inside this house for some

hours...We couldn't go out because Antonio's men were dangerously armed waiting for us....and we were out-numbered.

Me: You better call your husband.

Zoe: I'll...

She took her phone and dialed his number.

Zach: loud speaker.

Zoe: okey...

she paced around the house.

Zoe: Baby.

Walter: Why are you calling?

Zoe: what is that suppose to mean?.

Him: You're not suppose to call me until....

She cut her sentence.

Zoe: There're men outside the house, they're armed...what's going on?

Him: oh they are there already.



Zoe: you sent them?!.

Walter: did you honestly think I'd forgive you that easily for cheating on me?....I warned you that if you dare cross me you're dead.

Zoe: What?!.

Reality kicked in.

Dk: what the fuck does that have to do with us?.

Walter sent out a chuckle.

Walter: My boss wants RSA and you were standing in the way.

Zach: Fuck your boss!...I'm going to kill you!!.

Walter sent an evil laugh.

Zoe: Baby you're joking right?.

Walter: Goodbye baby....mcwaaah.

Zoe: Walter.

She looked at us.

Zoe: He hung up.

Zach: I'm going to kill that...

Before he could finish his sentence the door automatically opened and with one shot Zach was down on the floor.

Everything happened so fast but in slow motion.

We quickly hid ourselves for cover...

Zach: (Coughs)

Skhu: Zach hang in there...brother....hang in there.

He was hit on the chest...and I don't know what happened but I started shooting back along with my gang members.

Me: Dk watch!!!.

I was too late, the bullet had already met his body....I went to him and pulled him aside.

He was bleeding from his mouth.

Me: DK.

Him: Rico, ta.

He closed his eyes and eventually stopped breathing.

I was getting frustrated with every minute that passed by.

Almost all the members were now laying dead on the floor, Zoe was also dead...she got shot in her forehead.

Me: Skhumbuzi!.

I Was shouting as he was busy trying to save the dying Zach on the floor.

Me: Skh....

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*74\*\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Funeral preparations kept us all in our feet.

Candice said she wanted the ceremony to be at a beach front during sunset...Apparently that's how Zach wanted his final goodbye to be like.

Candice was also hands on during preparations..I think it's kind of gave her closure..

Me: This is it.

I said, putting my last bag on the car.

Amanda came and hugged me.

The kids and I were spending the weekend at MamaD's...the quads weren't to be around people and some of Zach's relatives were going to spend the weekend at my house so we had to move.

Amanda: Bye baby.

She kissed Lwazi who was sat comfortable on his car sit next to the quads.

Minnie: Mom I'm sitting on the front.

Me: Okey baby.

Amanda: Minnie be a good girl and please keep away from my son.

Minnie: I'll try but I'm not promising anything.

Amanda sighed and I laughed a little.

I saw Tyson making his way towards us.

Amanda: I'll get back to the dishes.....call me if you need anything.

Me: okey bye.

She left and Tyson got closer.

Him: Rato.

Things were sour between us.

Me: Bongani.

Him: I see you're ready to leave.

I looked around brushing my arms.

Me: Yes.

Him: Mhh.

There was silence for a while.

Me: so...what is it going to be?.

He looked at me.

Me: I mean, are you going to continue with your revenge plan?.

He sighed.

Him: Yes I am.

I looked at him for a long while...hoping that he'll realise how scared I am for him and reconsider but nothing.

Me: Okey then.

I turned to open the door but before I could even reach it, he held both my arms..

Me: Tyson.

He took me by surprise.

Him: What is your problem?!

Me: You're hurting me..

Him: Fuck! Venus...can I just have your support...just this once.

Me: My support?...I've always supported you but this time around I refuse....I refuse to bury my own husband.

Him: So you don't think I can handle them?.

Me: Just let go of me man.

He didn't...instead he got angry.

Him: it'll be a little nice having my wife believing in me.

I remained silent.

Minnie: Mom!!!.

She peeped through the window.

The minute Tyson saw her looking at us he got closer and hugged me...But I didn't hug him back.

Him: I'm sorry but this is one thing that I'll do..whether you approve or not.

He let go of me and went away without even turning to look at my reaction.

I sighed looking at him till he finally disappeared then got inside the car and drove away.

Skhu was worried about our safety so he had a security team driving not too far from us just to make sure no one gets to us.

The weekend was lonely and boring...all I did was spend time chatting with my pumpkin.

Minnie: I feel sorry for aunty Candice.

I pulled her towards me with my other arm...the other one was holding Lwazi.

Me: I know pumpkin it's sad.

Her: Junior won't know his Daddy just like I don't know my other mommy..

She was really sad....I didn't even calculate the situation that much..she must've been thinking about it for some time.



Me: baby..

She rested her head on my thighs....I played with her hair.

Me: Do you want me to tell you a secret?

She nodded.

Me: I don't know my mom too...She died while she was giving birth to me...her and I never met face to face.

Her: Really?...so you don't know what she looks like?.

Me: All I know is from the pictures my father showed me....but you know what?

Her: mhh.

Me: I know she loved me...just like Mam'Khanyi loved you and uncle Zach loved Junior.

She looked at me and flashed a smile.

It broke me seeing her that sad.....she's always jolly and hyper.

~

~

[Candice]

The funeral went exactly how I wanted it to. I don't know but I had this strong feeling..I knew that Zach was gone and never coming back but somehow I felt him that night...I felt his presence near, And that gave me some sort of assurance that everything is going to be alright.

Skhumbuzo walked in followed by Tyson.

Me: Hey....I thought you guys had already left.

Skhu: No..we were sitting outside with the uncles.

I chuckled.

Me: They're probably drunk.

Tyson: Not yet but they are getting there.

We all shared laughter.

Skhu: how are you and Junior holding up?

Me: We're doing great actually...he's been a good boy.

I said brushing my huge belly.

Skhu: that's what I want to hear.

There was silence for a while.

Tyson: Have you thought about what you want to do?

Me: You mean avenging Zach?

Him: Yes.

Skhu: whatever you want we're 100% behind you....just say the word.

Me: emm...I want Walter to pay, I want him to suffer for what he did but unfortunately I can't be the one who make him.

Skhu: why not?.

Me: It's what Zach would want....for me to stay away from killing and besides I'm about to be someone's mother now, I have my son to think

about....I can't welcome him on earth with bloody hands.

Tyson: understandable but I promise you....they will pay.

Skhu: All of them.

I smiled and they both got closer and we shared a hug.

~

~

[Tyson]

I was on my way home and the traffic was being unbearable....I was stuck on one area for minutes and it was irritating.

My head was all over the place with Venus being the number one of my problems, she refused to come back home because apparently "Her views don't count anymore", she went as far as sending me signed divorce papers to show how serious she was....on the

other hand, Walter just disappeared without a trace...He sold his house and quit his job...Good thing he doesn't know I'm coming for him..He'll regret the day he messed up with my life.

I got home and didn't get out of the car...I don't know why but I wasn't feeling like it.

Home was not the same without Venus, it's just a cold house...and with Mamzo and MamaD gone to MamaD's where Venus was...it's even worse.

My phone started ringing.

Me: Skhumbuzo?.

Skhu: I'm struggling....it's like I'm in a huge competition and I'm losing...it's frustrating.

His voice was breaking.

Me: Where are you?.

Skhu: I don't know..I'm driving around.

Me: let's meet at the warehouse...I'm on my way

there too.

Honestly, I was just as broken...but I needed to front so he can find his strength in me...That's what brothers are for.

Me: Damn you Walter.

I kept on clicking my tongue, driving like a maniac.

Before I knew it I smashed into someone car....

The driver got out and came to me...it was dark and quiet outside with no one on the road other than us...oh and the security guard outside some retail shop...the owner of the car I bumped into seemed drunk.

Him: What the fuck man!.

Me: Don't you know a stop sign when you see one?!.

I might have been wrong for smashing his car but he was suppose to stop too...he had no business shouting at me..we were both wrong.

Him: What was that?.

He got closer..Trying to act like a big boss...I moved my hand to the back, reaching for my gun.

I told myself that all the anger I had inside me...I'll take it out on him because he was pissing me off too.

Voice: Let's just go man.

Sounds familiar.

I turned to look at him and to my surprise it was Walter....drunk as fuck.

His eyes popped out when he saw me.

Him: T...you're suppose to be dead.

Me: Surprise!!.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*75\*\*\*\*\*

-----Bra-----

[Tyson]

I texted Skhumbuzo...telling him to meet me at some spot and after he got there we drove to this fancy house in some fancy gated community in the North. Walter said the owner is the boss who had all this planned.

I was surprised when we got there because that man looked so decent...he's your typical pastor kind of a man.

All the things Walter said about him looked far from his character, I guess that's what they mean when they say looks can be deceiving.

I let Skhumbuzo take care of him and as expected, he did only the best.

After that we locked Walter inside the warehouse.

I wanted the alcohol to be out of his system



first before I kill him...I wanted him to feel every pain as his dirty soul leaves his body.

Skhumbuzo was sitting on the chair outside drinking a cider.

Me: What's popping?.

Him: It's about to dawn.

I looked around.

Me: Yes, it is.

Him: I was hoping we could kill him before the sun comes out.

I chuckled.

I knew he wanted that because Zach was fond of the night, he found it peaceful and relaxing.

Me: We can always wait for a few hours.

Him: Yes..I think we should do that.

I smiled looking the other side.

Things were finally falling into place and I felt a

huge weight lifted off my shoulders.

Me: I love you man.

Him: I love you.

We fist bumped and side hugged for a short while.

All we had was each other now and we had to make the best of it...look out to each other.

The morning came and Skhumbuzo signalled me to go inside following him.

Me: Man!!!.

I was shocked..

Skhumbuzo had cut off three of his fingers, both his big toe and the left ear.

Him: He wasn't using the ear anyways so why not cut it...I told him, I warned him to stay away.

Walter was very much awake but he wasn't screaming in agony or whatsoever. He looked pale.

Me: why is he not reacting?.

Him: I gave him something.

He showed me the injection.

Him: He feels every pain but he can't react....I  
fiddled with his muscles too.

Me: You're mean.

Him: Don't judge me..

We both laughed.

I knelt next to Walter.

Me: Hi...it's me Rico...do you recognise me?!.  
I waved my hand on his face and I saw tears  
running down his face.

Me: No...no don't cry, Big boys don't cry.

Walter: Pl...ple...plea.

Me: Was that something?...I can't hear you?.

Skhu: enough man.

He pulled me and we walked out.

Skhu: Have you seen the news?.

Me: No why?.

Him: "High profile former agent was found laying in a pool of blood by his 11 year old grandson. There are no signs of force used to break in and nothing was taken from the house".

I smiled.

Me: They forgot to thank us for the job well done.

Skhu: You're crazy man.

I chuckled.

We spent the whole day talking and waiting for the evening, I guess Amanda and Skhu weren't on speaking terms just like Me and Palesa.

(Sigh).

Sometimes I think they sit together and decide on how they are going to make our lives a visit to hell.

Me: It's time.

We stood up.

Me: Rex...sit!.

I was referring to the dog we had eating  
Walter's body parts with him looking.

Skhu's idea not mine.

Walter: Please.

The shot had worn off because he was able to  
speak but moving was another story.

Walter: Kill me...I want to die...just kill me.

Skhu: That's the most wise thing you've ever  
suggested.

He was crying and looked scared..but no matter  
how sad he looked it didn't compare to the look  
on Candice's face when Zach's coffin was going  
down.

Me: We're going to role play a little.

Skhu: in that case I'm a police man.

Me: And I'm Santa

I moved closer to Walter and put the gun on top of his head.

Skhu: Just like Zach wanted it.

I pulled the trigger giving myself no time to feel guilt.

I had blood stains all over my face.

Skhu: Rico!.

I looked at him.

Him: It's all over now.

[08/29, 09:14] Strict: The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*76\*\*\*\*\*

[Tyson]

I was sitting at home drinking whiskey.

Yes we did it, we killed them all. All the people who had a hand in having our gang torn was either in some dirty river, abandoned buildings, bushes or in some dump site.

All that me and Skhumbuzo said we'll do we did it but...but what difference does it make?.

He's gone....he's never coming back and that's the pain we all have to live with for the rest of our lives.

My phone rang and I picked it.

Me: Amanda.

We were talking but not really on good terms.

Her: Candice just gave birth.

Me: Oh..emm

I didn't know what to say, Amanda didn't sound like she wanted to talk to me either.

Her: Yeah was just calling to let you know...it's a baby boy by the way.

Me: Amanda...

She cut me.

Her: I got to go.

She dropped the call.

I sighed.

I know Amanda will come around, Venus on the other hand....let's just say I'm scared.

I'm scared that she won't want to take me back...I know that maybe you're asking why don't I just talk to her?.

Well it's because I don't want to push her away even more but I have to do something, for now I'll just stay away from her space.

I called Skhumbuzo and he gave me the coordinates of where Candice was...I took a quick shower and drove off.

I walked past the reception because Skhumbuzo gave me the room and the floor.



I opened the door and walked in. To my surprise the room was full.

My eyes landed on Venus who looked even more beautiful and angry to see me.

Shit!...I should've known she was going to be here.

~

~

[Venus]

Tyson and I looked at each other for what felt like a decade. We had our eyes locked at each other.

A part of me wanted to run to him and hug him tight but I didn't...I was over clouded by the fear I had, fear of losing him. What if I hug him today and tomorrow have someone bring his body home?...I can't have that.

That's why I have to learn....learn how to live without him. As hard as it is I have to try.

I cleared my throat and looked away.

He greeted and bonded with everyone  
meanwhile I was sitting a bit far from them.

Later on we all walked out to our separate cars.

Him: Palesa.

Me: Tyson I have to get home it's kinda late.

Him: Home?.

Me: Yes, now if you'll excuse me....

Him: Venus please!.

I looked at him and he was so broken...his voice  
was breaking.

Me: Can we not do this here.

Him: Then have coffee with me, I have  
something I want you to know.

Me: Tyson.

Him: Please.

I looked at him for a while, Lord knows I missed

him.

Him: Come.

He pulled my hand and we walked to the cafeteria. He ordered two cups of coffee and chocolate muffins.

Me: Thank you.

He leaned back and looked at me.

Me: What?.

Him: I like how you admire your coffee.

I tried not to blush...but!.

I quickly kept a straight face.

Me: I was thinking, we should have something like visiting schedules.

Him: What?

Me: I thought you'd want to spend time with the kids.

Him: Yes....at home, their home.

Me: That's not happening.

He sighed.

Him: You're serious about leaving me?.

I looked at him.

Him: Why?.

I didn't respond.

Him: Venus I love you and...If you...Fuck!(softly).

He was quiet for a while.

He reached for his pocket and got out a gift box.

Him: I've been carrying this around, it gave me some sort of closure....Happy belated anniversary.

He put the box in front of me and stood.

Him: I love you Rato.

I didn't realise I was crying until I felt tears on my cheek.

I needed to stop him, he has to know that I love

him too.

Me: Tyson!.

I was shouting following him out.

Man: Tyson Khumalo?.

Him: That's me.

A man wearing police uniform went behind him.

Man: You're under arrest for killing..

I just went blank. Our eyes met again and I think he was trying to say something....all I heard was "Rato".

My eyes were clouded by tears. My mouth was opened.

Me: Tyson!!!!

I just broke down.

The arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*77\*\*\*\*\*

final insert one

[Venus]

A week later I was a mess, well emotionally. Tyson was still in holding cells. He was arrest for killing Walter and they didn't have much proof other that Walter told his partner that should anything happen to him Tyson is responsible, I don't know what that man has against my husband but either way he's not getting his way with this...I can't have my husband spending half his life in jail.

I was with Tyson's lawyer, they are close too just not that close.

Me: They have nothing against him, it's their word against his.

Him: That's true but.

I cut his sentence.

Me: Good, then you have to get him out.

Him: Ma'am...

Me: And please try playing far from the court...avoid unnecessary scandals.

Him: It's a high case involving one of their own, of course they'll want to make an example out Tyson.

I chuckled.

Me: Good thing they don't have any proof...they'll be just wasting their time.

Him: We don't know that.

Me: Pardon?

Him: Tyson is a lawyer, a feared one in the profession...they know he can get off anything and with all that they still went for him...

Me: What are you saying?.

Him: They have something, something that can

hold greatly in court.

I started panicking.

Me: You're his lawyer...don't you know what is it that they have against him?.

He remained silent.

Me: But you will get him out right?.

He cleared his throats.

Him: You know what, I will....I'll get him out.

I smiled faintly.

Me: Okey, I'm sure he'll also like the sound of that....please excuse me I still have to pass by the station before...

Him: I don't think that's a good idea.

Me: Why?....what's wrong?..will it ruin the case?.

Him: I think we should not distrust him so he can be fully attentive on the case.

I stopped and looked at him, he avoided my



eyes and that told me he's hiding something.

Me: He...

I breath slowly.

Me: He said he don't want to see me didn't he?

Him: Emm.

I felt tears filling my eyes.

Why would Tyson do this to me?.

Me: Its okay I understand...emm excuse me.

I stood up rushing before he recognise my  
already falling tears.

~

~

[Candice]

I was at home rocking junior back and forth  
trying to make him sleep.

Zach's mom has been great help...I didn't  
realise how much I didn't know about babies

until her.

Her: You're ready?.

Me: Oh damn!...I almost put him to sleep.

Her: it's okey....

We were to burn an incense for him, something about introducing him to the ancestors, Zach included.

It was a family thing so it was only the three of us.

Her: change into a longer skirt and cover your head and shoulders.

She said that taking Junior from my hands.

Me: I'll be there in a minute.

She walked out leaving me with my thoughts.

I hugged my arms and looked around.

Me: I wish you were here with me.

~

~

[Tyson]

I made my way back to the cells I was occupying after my talk with Skhu on the phone.

I might appear selfish for keeping Venus away but I won't have my wife seeing me like this....I just won't.

Him: Tyson Khumalo.

Me: That's me.

Him: Your lawyer is here to see you.

Just the person I wanted to see.

I walked out to the rooms on the other side.

Me: My man.

We hand shakes.

Him: How are you holding up.

Me: I need to get out of here, I have a family to be with...so tell me, what are we facing?.

Him: A witness, records of you threatening Walter plus you don't have an alibi.

Me: And being in a bar all night is not good enough.

Him: It gets worse.

Me: What?.

Him: Your court date is scheduled the day after tomorrow and Judge Solly is handling the case.

Me: What!?!...thee Judge Solly?

He nodded.

Him: But it's an internal case so only us will be present.

I was quiet for a while.q5t

Me: This is a game changer...I will handle the case myself.

Him: No that's crazy.

Me: That man hate my gut..I'm sure he volunteered working on my case...he'll roast you.

Him: I can handle him.

Me: Listen, this is for the best.

I guess he realised he's fighting a losing battle and let me be.

Him: if you change your mind give me a call.

Me: Please tell Skhumbuzo to see me as soon as he can.

He nodded then walked out.

My chances of going home were getting slimmer each second, I was counting on Skhumbuzo to find me something I can use against Solly or else..

The arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*78\*\*\*\*\*

Final insert two

[Venus]

I kept on staring at the watch on the wall as if I was expecting a huge announcement, possibly about my death hour.

The small sounds made by the moving hands of the clock sounded louder than usual..each movement was accompanied by a tear from my eye...I can't lose my husband, not to jail.

I just wish he would let me in and let me help...even Skhumbuzo is shutting me out, "You shouldn't be worrying about this Tyson is my brother and I'll get him out" he said.

Do I want to be worried?..No!...but I can't help it. This is part of the reason I wanted to keep away from Tyson, I'd rather he lose me than me lose him....am I being too selfish?.

I wiped a tear that just fell.

Tyson is going to court today and I don't even have the slightest idea what is going to become of me should things go wrong?.

My phone beeped and it was reminder than Candice is moving today.

She decided to move in with Zach's mom out of town.

Me: Damn!.

I forgot to wrap the gift I got for her and Junior.

Everything was just a mess, I had to smile for Candice and Cry for Tyson, who was shutting me out by the way.

How do I get through this without breaking.

~

~

[Amanda]

I was having breakfast in the kitchen when someone buzzed.

Skhu: I'll get it.

My husband( sigh), As much as I'd like to stay mad at him but he's currently dealing with a lot, getting my brother out of Jail being part of it.

Skhu: It's Venus.

He said that walking up the stairs.

Me: Want something to eat?.

Him: No I'm good.

I guess things were not going well.

After a while Venus walked in holding a box.

Me: Hey.

Judging from her eyes, she's been crying.

Her: Hi, I was hoping you'll help me wrap this.

I stood up and hugged her.

She started sobbing.

Me: It's okey, it's okey.

She cried until she eventually calm down.



Candice: Who left the gate open in Skhumuzo's house?.

Me: Hey...

She gave us hugs then stopped to look at Venus.

Her: Why are you here?.

She directed that to Venus.

Venus: What is that suppose to mean?.

Candice: Is Tyson not making appearances in court in about....

She looked at her wrist watch.

Her: Three hours thirty minute?.

Venus: He is and he said he don't want me there so..

Candice: and you listened?.

I kept on signaling to her to stop with the questions but Candice was having none of that.

Her: It doesn't matter if he don't want you but as long he needs you..you be there!.

Venus lost it.

Venus: He told me to back off damn it!!.

There was awful silence, I looked at Candice then Venus, She looked at me then ran out of the room.

Me: Candice!

I tried following Venus but Candice pulled me.

Candice: Give her space.

I forgot how bold she can get, she's not afraid to just give it to you straight...as long as it's the truth.

~

~

[Venus]

I stopped by Skhumbuzo's study...Merely because I heard sounds, more like he was

smashing the table.

Him: Fuck!.

I moved closer to the door, it was open. I walked in.

Me: Sk...Skhumbuzo.

He looked at me....he was breathing heavily.

Him: Venus I...

I saw papers on the floor, I tried to pick them up but he beat me to it.

Me: What's that?.

Him: It's nothing.

Me: Skhumbuzo stop shutting me out...I'm trying to help here.

Him: Really Venus it's nothing.

He said that walking away.

I rubbed my face with my hands, I was so frustrated.

I pulled his chair and sat down...My eyes landed on some picture on the floor.

I picked it up.

Skhu: What are you doing with that?..

I didn't realise he was back in the room.

Me: I should be asking you that ..what are you doing with Mr Solly's picture?

Him: You know him?.

Me: He and my father were close friends...what do you want with him?.

Him: He's handling Tyson's case.

The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*\*79\*\*\*\*\*

Final insert three

[Venus]

I stormed out of the study room..we didn't have much time given we still had to drive..and the court was not close from Amanda's house.

Candice: Venus..I'm sorry about what I said I didn't mean it in a bad way.. I just think that if I was put in your situation I'd do anything, I mean anything to be there for my husband..I'm not trying to judge you or tell what to do but..

She was talking too much and I had to stop her.

Me: Candice.

Her: Please I have to say this.

I sighed, Time was running out.

Her: I know you love Tyson and he loves you too, don't give up on him please, even if you don't get him out just be there for him.

Me: That's what I'm trying to do.

She widened her eyes.

Her: oh?

Me: Yes...and you're talking too much, I'm in a rush.

She jumped in excitement..along with Amanda.

Candice: Good!..Tyson killed that man for me, us...he doesn't...

Me: yeah! yeah!..Skhumbuzo let's go.

We rushed out leaving the crazy women smiling.

My heart started beating fast as we approached the court. With all the stories Skhumbuzo told me about Mr Solly hating Tyson, I was scared that I wasn't going to be able to convince him.

We got outside the car and ran towards the room, We stopped outside.

Me: There's no one in here.

Skhumbuzo looked at his wrist watch.

Him: We are 20 minutes early.

I sighed and started pacing around.

His phone rang and he picked it.

Him: Hello,...what do you mean you haven't found him?...but they are not there 24/7...hey make a plan bribe someone whatever you do but find him!.

He dropped the call pissed.

Me: what was that about?

Him: my guys can't find the eye witness against Tyson.

Me: oh lord.

My hands were shaking and sweating..I felt like my heart was going to beat out of my chest.

Him: Hey!

He looked at me.

Him: Come I'll get you something to drink.

We went to the canteen, I sat down while he went to get me coffee to calm me down.

I felt like screaming but I couldn't, I didn't want people looking at me like I'm crazy.

I closed my eyes and faced up.

Me: Dear Lord please help me!.

I opened my eyes and let them wonder around, Skhumbuzo was taking his time. My eyes landed on Mr Solly, he was about to leave after putting money on the bill for the coffee, judging from the cup which was on his table.

It must've been adrenaline because I don't know how but I found myself standing in front of him.

Me: Mr Solly.

He looked at me.

Him: Sorry Miss but I'm rushing somewhere.

Me: You don't recognise me do you?

He looked at me, but I could see he still didn't recognise me. I can't blame him though, it's a long time since he last saw me..he also looked



so old, like way too old.

Me: Venus Kh..Johnso, My father was your friend, the mayor of..

Him: Oh Chips look at you all grown.

I smiled.

Him: How have you been?.

Me: I've been..just fine.

He squeezed my cheek.

Me: Mr Solly I need a huge favour.

Him: Oh darling I'm rushing to court but take my card..

He gave it to me.

Him: Call me and we'll talk.

Me: It can't wait I'm..

Him: opsie! Look at the time.

He stood up.

Me: Tyson Khumalo.

He gave me his attention.

Me: He's my husband.

Him: What?!

He was shocked.

Me: I need you to be lenient on him.

Him: As in like let him walk free?.

Me: I know what I'm asking is wrong but.

Him: exactly..and I can't do it.

I tried convincing him but he was having none of it.

Me: Uncle please, I spent the early years of my life being abused in every way possible after my father he is the only man who cared for me, he took care of me.

Him: He's bad news, you're better off without him.

Me: He's my husband, my kids father!.

Him: Sorry but this is not personal I'm just doing my job.

He attempted working away.

Me: No I'm sorry.

He turned and looked at me.

Me: This is not what I wanted but I seem to have no choice.

I reached inside my bag searching for some pills or anything that I can use but nothing.

Shit!...I had to think fast...I saw Skhumbuzo standing not so far from us looking at us.

Me: With all the years you worked and the experience you have you should know better than to take anything from a public store before a case, especially if the case involves a gangster and his wife who'll do anything to save him, even drug the judge.

He widened his eyes.

Him: You what?.

Me: I bet your throat is scratchy and you have some sort of hotness in your stomach.

He cleared his throat.

Me: Skhumbuzo has the doze to reverse it....you only have two hours actually one hour fifty two minutes.

Him: Who are you because you're not Johnson's daughter.

Me: I am plus I married Tyson Khumalo...uncle we really don't have much time, especially you, now I volunteer to take care of the witness....just make sure my husband gets out!.

Him: You're crazy!.

He said that irritatedly and stormed out.

I sighed and looked at Skhumbuzo who made his way towards me.

Him: And.

Me: I threatned him but he didn't say yes..what now?.

Skhu: We wait.

One thing I hated, waiting..

~

~

[Tyson]

Mr Solly looked pissed and ready to devour me.

I know Skhumbuzo is a mess where ever he is...he couldn't find anything on Solly and He hates losing.

Mr Solly: Mr Khumalo...Mr Khumalo!.

I snapped out of it.

Him: Are you okey?...need anything to drink like water?.

Bloody busted was enjoying this.

Me: I'm fine we can proceed.

Him: okey.

Lawyer: Do you have anyone who can verify you being not in the area in question?.

Before I could answer the door opened and Venus walked in.

Her: Yes!.

She shouted from the door making her way in.

Mr Cele the lawyer looked at the judge, he nodded.

Mr C: You are that person?.

Venus: Yes I am.

She walked to the stand before they told her to, an officer collected a script from her..all her focus was on Mr Cele then Mr Solly..she didn't even look at me.

What was she doing here?..lawyers are mean and they'll roast her without thinking twice.

Mr C: okey.

He chuckled.

Mr C: Tell us where Mr Tyson Khumalo was on the night in question.

Venus looked at him straight in the eye and spoke with so much confidence.

Her: He was at home.

Him: With you?.

Her: Yes.

Him: Is there a chance that he could have sneaked out without you seeing him.

Her: No.

Her answers were straight foward. she was so good you'd swear she was trained before hand.

Him: You sound so certain.

Her: Because I am.

Him: Do you mind telling us why?.

Her: He was home with me..having sex.

He cleared his throat.

Him: After that?.

Her: there's no after..he was at home with me having sex the whole night.

There was silence.

Him: Mrs Khumalo..sorry Dr Khumalo...we have someone who saw Mr Khumalo taking the late Walter into his car after beating him up.

Her: Really?..maybe you should ask him if he saw properly..

Mr Cele looked at the judge.

Him: I'd like to bring in a witness your honour.

Solly: Go ahead.

I knew right then that I have met dead end..unless the witness have no tangible proof.

Venus on the other hand looked positive.

Mr Cele called for him but he didn't show up, he called again...nothing.



I looked at Venus who looked at Solly while taking out what looked like a small perfume bottle if I may assume.

Mr Solly: You have something in your hands  
Chi...Dr Khumalo.

Venus: Yes your honour....it's a drug I made...it saves lives so I call it a life changer..some men need it so I carry it with me always.

Mr Solly: We do not allow such inside this room.

Venus: I'm sorry but you may never now who's heart is going to stop in the "Next few minutes" so it's better safe than sorry.

I looked at them like what the fuck is happening in here!.

An officer walked to the judge and whispered something before going back to the door.

Solly: Due to lack of a witness and tangible proof against Mr Tyson Khumalo..case dismissed.

Owk I had to be dreaming..Solly didn't just let me off..not that easily!.

Venus put both her hands on the mouth trying to stop tears from falling but it looked like she was failing...She quickly stormed out sobbing loudly.

Solly: Dr Khumalo!!.

He went after her.

~

~

[Venus]

Solly: Hey Chips..

I turned and looked at her with tears.

Him: The doze?.

I wiped my tears and gave him the perfume bottle.

Me: I lied.

Him: You didn't drug me?!.  
I shock my head No.

Him: Damn you!.

He was so angry he literally went red.

Him: I felt the hotness...all the things you said.

Me: It was all in your head.

He clicked his tongue and attempted going back in.

Me: Uncle, I'm sorry..I didn't mean to disrespect you I just did what I had to do.

He walked away.

Skhumbuzo: Venus.

Me: He's coming out soon.

I sobbed out loudly.

Skhu: Jesus!.

The Arranged: Forever Yours

◦

◦

\*\*\*\*80\*\*\*\*

[Venus]

Tyson was released a day after and I was still staying at MamaD's.

I wanted to go home I just felt stupid for moving out in the first place because no matter what happens Tyson will always have a huge special place in my heart..I just had to embrace it.

It's been a week since the trial...I've been keeping in touch with everyone but Tyson.

Me: Girlfriend....I'm taking a drive with the Okuhles..want to join us?.

Her: Hau Girlfriend I told you I'm getting ready for my ride to the choir practice..Phela tomorrow we have to impress.

Me: Ohh..I forgot.

There were Regional church choir competitions the next day and MamaD's choir was also participating.

Me: We could drop you off you know?.

Her: Don't be silly...go on have your fresh air I'll be okey.

Me: Okey then bye.

I hugged her then took the quads and sat them on their baby car sit all buckled up, joys of owning a family car.

We drove around by the breeze...all the way to the busy roads near the malls and decided to visit Minnie at her school.

Her: Rato.

I looked at her shocked...why is she calling me that.

She giggled.

Me: Rato?..only Tyson calls me that.

Her: Only Tyson calls me princess...well not anymore.

I laughed.

Me: Cheeky buddy!.

We decided to go home with her after signing the thousand documents just for me to take my daughter home...good thing it was a saturday.

We did a drive thru and ordered a burger and chips for the princess and a chicken salad for myself.

We continued driving around admiring the beauty of nature until I miraculously made a stop at my house..

It looked like nobody was home because I had to buzz like a hundred times before someone answered.

Him: Who is it?.

That voice....it's still the sweetest thing I've ever heard.

I cleared my throat.

Me: The owner of the house!..

He didn't respond I just saw the gate opening and I drove in.

The door opened before I could even knock.

Our eyes met and somehow we stood silently.

Him: Rato.

Me: Tyson.

There was awkward silence for a while...until I broke the silence.

Me: We were driving around with the kids and I..we somehow ended here.

Him: Mhh.

Me: Tyson I'm sorry okey, I was just scared for you...no, I was scared for me..I know I could never survive living without you and I thought that maybe if I stayed away I'd learn but I'm not learning...instead every second is torture and I

don't want that anymore...I don't want to live without you.

He got close to me and wiped the tear that just fell.

We were still standing by the door way with him inside and me outside.

Him: Tell me what to do and I'll do it.

He was so sincere.

I walked one step towards him...I brushed his arms with both my hands.

Me: Don't leave me.

He pulled me and embraced my body with a hug.

Him: I promise I won't.

I remained in his hands for a while until he broke the hug.

Him: Does this mean you're coming back home...to me?.

Me: To have...



He smiled.

Him: and To hold.

Me: Forever Yours.

Him: Forever Yours.

He picked me up and span me around while kissing me all over my face.

Minnie: Candy!!!...Enzo pooped and it's smelly.

I looked at the car then Tyson...

He cleared his throat.

Him: I just remember I have to send this urgent email and..

Me: It's okey baby....Pumpkin come!, we're going back to Ma...

Him: That's not happening!!.

We all laughed..

-

Six years later.

We were gathered around watching Junior on TV, his school had oral competitions and he came first place scoring a chance to compete in the provincial level.

They were doing story telling.

Junior: Their love was arranged long before they met and forever they belong..the Khumalo's.

Everyone in the audience stood up and clapped.

Melo: Candy your phone is ringing.

Yep, their decided to follow their sis and call me Candy.

Minnie: Hey it's Mommy to you.

My baby girl had grown...she was in a sixth grade.

Amanda: Please tell her..learn to respect Melokuhle.

It's funny how Amanda and Minnie are now

buddies, maybe it's because they decided to form against Melokuhle who is the exact younger version of Minnie.

Me: Thandokuhle please get mommy's phone.

He stood up from his father's lap, took the phone to me then went back to his father..they were inseparable.

Enzo: I'll lower the volume.

She said excitedly.

I answered the call and it was Candice, we spoke for a while then dropped the call.

Philokuhle: MamaD?

MamaD: Yes.

Her: Yersteday we saw Jesus home...they are painting it.

MamaD: Yes baby...and when they are done we'll go visit right?.

Her: Yeeey!.

They were talking about the new church down the street.

Lwazi: Daddy we need to go.

He was pulling Skhumbuzo's jacket.

Skhu: Wait champ I told you we'll go in the afternoon.

Tyson: And where are you two going.

He asked chuckling.

Lwazi: To order the cake.

Me: Hazel's birthday?.

Hazel is Amanda's daughter, she's almost a year old...her name was Pearl but we called her Hazel because of her hazel brown eyes.

Amanda: The son and the father decided to throw a graduation party...it's a day before Hazel's birthday...meaning two parties.

Minnie: Oh please it's not like you passed anything serious like matric it was only grade R.

We all laughed looking at Minnie.

Amanda: Oh Please you also had a party.

Minnie: Because I was really smart in grade R.

Amanda: So is he.

Minnie rolled her eyes and we laughed.

wait!...is it me or Amanda and Minnie were at it again?..I gueses they never stopped.

Me: Okey okey...who wants a drink.

everyone: Me!.

I laughed.

Tyson: I will help you.

we both stood up to the kitchen.

He kept on stealing glances at me smiling.

me: What?.

Him: Did I ever thank you for bearing me beautiful children?.

I put my hand on my face, acted as if I was

thinking hard.

Me: No, I don't remember.

He wrapped his hands around me.

Him: Thank you Dr Khumalo.

he kissed me..

Him: Thank you for even the little on the way.

He brushed my belly with a smirk on his face.

Me: I'm going to Kill Amanda!...it was suppose to be a surprise.

Him: In that case you should've hid the scan in a safer place than your drawer.

Me: Damn Me!.

he smiled.

Him: I love you Rato.

Me: And I love you more.

~

~

\*\*\*\*\*The End\*\*\*\*\*